

A NEW  
*SPANISH*  
GRAMMAR,

More perfect than any hitherto publish'd.

All the ERRORS of the former being  
Corrected, and the RULES for Learning  
that Language much improv'd.

To which is added, A

VOCABULARY

Of the most necessary WORDS:

Also a COLLECTION of

PHRASES *and* DIALOGUES

Adapted to

FAMILIAR DISCOURSE.

---

By Capt. JOHN STEVENS, Author  
of the large SPANISH DICTIONARY.

---

The SECOND EDITION.

---

The whole Improved, Corrected, and Amended,  
By SEBASTIAN PUCHOL, D. D.

---

LONDON:

Printed for T. MEIGHAN in *Drury-Lane*,  
T. COX at the *Lamb* under the *Royal-Ex-*  
*change*, and J. WOOD in *Pater-noster-row*.

MDCCXXXIX.



A L

Múí ilustre y nóble Señor

Don *GUILLELMO STANHOPE*,

Señór Barón de HARRINGTON,

Embaxadór que fue en la Corte de España, Plenipotenciário en los Congressos de Sevilla, y Soissons ; y al presente úno de los Principáles Secretários de Estdo de su Magestad Británica, del Conféjo de su Mag<sup>d</sup>. &c.

Exc<sup>mo</sup>. Señor.



O dexára en mi de ser animosidad temerária, el ponér éste libro à los piés de V. Ex. si su buén índole y afabilidad no le quitássen el ser Ossadía.

El Nombre de Stanhope es tan conocido en España, de tantos años à ésta parte ; y su múí ilustre y nóble Prosápia, tan altamente respetada y aplaudida, que nunca cederá al olvido su Memória: yá



## D E D I C A T I O N.

por las Múchas y continuádas Embaxádas conque han ilustrádo aquella Corte ; yá por las heróicas hazañas, que, en tiempo de Guérra, han merecido los apláusos de la Európa tóda ; ò yá por la tranquilidad, que han sugerido en vários Congrésos para el bién público. En tiempo de Páz, les ha venerádo la España como Nativos de aquél País, y en tiempo de Guérra les há considerádo tan Galánes como Valerófos. En recíproca benevoléncia, siempre aquélla familia há mostrádo tál inclinación y Caríño à los de aquella nación, que, parece, le asiste una propensión innáta à beneficiarles y protegerles.

Esto es, loque esfuerza mi humildád à ofrecér à su Ex. éste tenuíssimo obsequio ; pues V. E. há heredádo, como que en compléxo, lo heróico y especíales prerogativas de la familia tóda : há seguído los pássos, continuádo los progréssos, y adelantádo la glória de sus Antecessóres. Háí múchos, que confágran sus libros à Príncipes y Proceres, ajénos del conocimiento de que trátan, dando por motivo la necesidad de su proteccíon cóntra los Malévolos (como si con el libro no se compráse la libertád de murmurár del) : Mas cuerdos y menos Lifonjéros éran los Antíguos, que dedicában los súyos, ò à sus Amígos, ò algún Príncipe inteligente, à quién, por razón del argumento, se le debía la óbra. Y revo-cando yo al úso moderno la práctica de los Antíguos, Nádíe podrá negár mi acierto en la elección de V. E. pues elíjo à Persóna tan beneméríta, que puéde juzgár y aprobár : luégo en váno solicitára yo à V. E. pára la acceptacion, quando de justícia se le debe esta dedicatória. Sé bién, que el tributárle elógios, será ofendér su Modéstia : Porloque suplico, solo, elque V. E. se digne de recebír y patrocínár ésta obrílla, como à demostración de mi Afecto y Veneración. En cáso, que V. E. halláre algo de su agrádo

## DEDICATION.

grádo y mereciére su aprobación, me quedará el consuélo de decírle, loque Horácio à su Mecénas :

*Magnum hoc ego duco, quod placui tibi.*

Y la obligación de rogár à Diós, le G<sup>de</sup>. y prospére por dilatádos años : Afsegurándole, que en tanto me tendré por feliz, en quanto publicaré que sói, con el debído rendimiento, de

*V. Exc<sup>a</sup>.*

*El mas humilde y Obediente servidór*

*Q. B. S. M.*

SEBASTIAN PUCHOL, D. D.





T H E  
P R E F A C E.

**U**PON a careful Examination of this Grammar, (altho' the best that is extant,) I found the Rules laid down so very deficient and incorrect, that I thought I could not do the Publick a greater Service, than by presenting them with one more perfect. This induced me to undertake the Correction of it; to lay down a new, modern, and approved Orthography and Etymology; and to add so many necessary Rules to it, that the Reader, who is acquainted with the former Edition, will hardly know that this is STEVENS'S GRAMMAR. I do not intend to undervalue what others have done of this Nature: What I can say without Presumption is, that I have consulted all former Grammars, and inserted in this what I have found well grounded: I have rectified Abundance of Mistakes, which other Authors have passed over, and corrected others laid down by them as established Rules; and I leave the Learned to Judge of the many Improvements made in this Edition.



## The P R E F A C E.

The Rules for the true Pronuntiation are as clearly expressed as can be done in *Writing*. The *Articles and Parts of Speech* are explained in a Manner easy and intelligible to young Beginners. The Conjugation of *Verbs* (one of the most intricate Parts of the Castilian Language) is laid down in the most plain Manner, to each of which is added that of the *Passive, Reciprocal, Impersonal, and other irregular Verbs*. I have also inserted two Tables, by which the Learned will, at first view, see the Difference between the three Conjugations.

The Curious will herein find all that is requisite and necessary, to lead them into the perfect Knowledge of the Castilian (commonly called the Spanish Tongue) which has been preserved in those Provinces, in a greater Purity and Perfection, than in any other of the more distant ones from the Court: This was the Reason that induced King Don Alonzo the Wise to order that all publick Writings, &c. should be made in the Castilian Tongue. I have laid down some fixt Rules in the Rudiments, to avoid ambiguity in the Pronuntiation of the Letters B, V, &c. erroneously used before, even among the Spaniards. The Vocabulary, Familiar Phrases, and the Colloquies are carefully amended; and all the Words are accented to avoid Mistakes in the Pronuntiation.

It was high Time (nay there was an absolute necessity) to make a new Edition of the Spanish Grammar: For all Languages alter by Time and Custom; and the Castilian has received so many Alterations, that no-body can pretend to teach it, or learn it in Perfection, as it is spoken at Court, and used by modern Authors, without some new Instructions. The C,  
(called



## The P R E F A C E.

*(called cedilla) which was so much in use before, is now left off, and the Reasons for it the Reader will find in my Observations on that Letter, and the z is substituted in its Place. The y, which commonly passed as a Vowel, is now a Consonant in Composition. Some of the Spanish Words are softened, and others altered, as more conformable to the Latin; as instead of Coraçon we say Corazón: for vezes, dezír, hazér; véces, decír, hacér: instead of estoy, doy, Reyno; estói, dói, Réino: for dava, iva, devo, escrivo; dába, íba, débo, escribo: for Cavállo, Gobierno; Cabállo, Gobiérno: for abuelo or aguelo; avuélo: hái for ay or hay: Ahí for aí or haí, &c. I have followed, in the Correction of this Grammar, the Dictionary lately published by the Royal Academy of Madrid, which is the only Standard for all those who aim at Speaking and Writing correctly and elegantly the Spanish Language.*



A NEW,



THE  
R U D I M E N T S  
OF THE  
*Spanish Grammar.*



AS there are many who study the CASTILIAN language, without understanding before-hand what Grammar is, and that every body may have certain rules for his guide, I think it may not be useless to make an epitomy of it and its parts.

GRAMMAR is the art of speaking and writing properly. And is divided into four parts, *viz.*

ORTHOGRAPHY, or the method of true writing.

ETYMOLOGY, or the knowledge of the original words.

SYNTAX, or the manner of forming the words into sentences.

PROSODY, or the knowledge of the accent or quantity of the syllables, as to their being pronounced long or short.

B

PART



## PART I.

Of *ORTHOGRAPHY*,

*Which contains some very curious and necessary observations to learn the Castilian tongue in perfection.*

## CHAP. I.

*Of the Letters in general.*

**T**HE *Spanish* language has not a peculiar alphabet of it's own, tho' it is not disputable, but that before the conquest of *Spain* by the *Romans*, the *Spaniards* had characters or letters to express their language in, and that the *Goths* also introduced theirs. But there is no memorial of the former, and the *Gothic* ceased in the year 1091 by decree of the national council at *Leon*, in the reign of *Don Alonso VI.* in which it was appointed that no characters should be used besides that of the *Roman*: Ever since which time they have continued the *Latin* letters; with the addition of a few borrowed from the *Greek*, in order to own their debt for such words as they took from that language, and these are *ch, k, ph, th, y*, correspondent to *χ, κ, φ, θ, and υ.*

The *Castilian* alphabet consists of twenty-six letters, including the *b*: the twenty-three following are common to other languages.

A, B, C, D, E, F, G, H, I, K, L, M, N, O, P, Q,  
R, S, T, U, X, Y, Z.

a, b, c, d, e, f, g, h, i, k, l, m, n, o, p, q, r, s,  
t, u, x, y, z.

And



And the other three letters ç, j, ñ, for their different pronunciation are peculiar to the *Castilian* language.

Of the common, these five are vowels A, E, I, O, U, to which the Y is added for the Greek words, so called from their expressing a sound without the help of any other letter. The rest are consonants, so called from their having no sound alone, and are regularly divided into *mutes* and *semi-vowels*; or, as others say, into *natural* and *confus'd*: the *mutes* or *natural* are B, C, D, G, K, P, Q, T, Z, and the *semi-vowels* or *confused* are F, H, L, M, N, R, S, X, so called for their being pronounced with a vowel before and after it.

Of which L, M, N, R, S, are liquids: ç, j, ñ, v, and y, are likewise consonants in the *Spanish* language.

*Of the pronunciation of the letters.*

**A** Letter is nothing more (in the sense we speak here) than *a note of a peculiar sound, and an individual part of a syllable.*

Letters are (as some authors affirm) in comparison to the languages what notes are to Musick. If from the notes may be formed various and innumerable tones, whose sweet and pleasant harmony cherish, and with sounding eloquence persuades; so are the concerts of words infinite, which result from the letters, whose composition with an eloquent melody describes to us the thoughts, and brings the invisible to life: both as written, speak to the eyes, and as pronounced, to the hearing. And if nobody without the perfect knowledge of notes can boast of being a Musician; less can any one presume to know with delicacy a language without a full knowledge of the letters.



#### 4      *The RUDIMENTS of*

For which reason, and as in the order of nature, the simple is first, and then the compound, it appears proper to begin by the vowels, whose sound is so simple as to be formed only by opening the mouth.

##### *Of the vowels.*

##### A   a

**I**S pronounced as in *English*, *aw*, as in the words *all, ball, call, ball*: without differing from the manner in which it is pronounced by other nations.

##### E   e

Is pronounced the same as in the *Latin, Italian,* and *French* tongues, nay even the same as in the *English* in the words *to bless, to send*.

Tho' *e* be doubled it never loses its pronunciation, so that when there are two *ee* in a word, both are plainly and distinctly pronounced, as *créer*, to believe; *léer*, to read.

##### I.   Y.

These letters are called *i Latin*, and *y Greek*: the former preserves it's natural pronunciation in composition, and is pronounced by all nations, as in these words, *visible, vision, terrible*: the latter has the same pronunciation; but when in composition is a consonant, and is pronounced as two *ii*, as *ayúda*, help; *ayúno*, a fast.

Of *j* called *i jóta*. See letter G.

##### O

Has the same pronunciation as in *Latin* and *English*, in these words *thróno*, throne; *obediente*, obedient.

U. V.

The *Spanish* language has two *u*'s as well as the *Latin* ; *u* vowel called by the *Spaniards* an open or square *u* ; and *v* consonant called *v* close, or *de Corazoncillo*, which always goes before the vowels, and is never joined to a consonant, nor ends any word. *U* vowel is pronounced as double *o o* in *English*, and these words *Cupido* a *Cupid*, *Cúra* a *Curate* or a *Cure*, are pronounced as if they were written thus *Coopido*, *coora* ; because the pronunciation of the words book *libro*, cook *cozinéro*, is exactly the same as that of the *u* vowel in *Spanish*.

*V* consonant is pronounced by the *Spaniards* in the same manner as the *u* vowel ; tho' there are some authors who pretend to say, that it's pronunciation is a sound between that of *b* and *u*, but I see no manner of ground for this exception.

*Observations upon the vowels.*

A.

**T**HIS letter has often the masculine accent, as *amará*, he will love ; *bará*, he will do it ; and the feminine, as *amára*, when I might love, in the last syllable. There are four diphthongs formed of this vowel when it goes before other vowels, as we shall shew hereafter.

*A* when by itself, stands for a preposition which denotes the dative case, as *dóí la preferéncia à Pédro*, I give the preference to Peter ; it governs also the accusative, as *yo ámo à Dios*, I love God ; denotes the part or place where one goes, as *vóí à Róma*, I go to Rome, it also precedes the accusative when before an infinitive governed by another verb, as *vámos à*



## 6      *The RUDIMENTS of*

*cenár*, let us go to supper ; *à passeár*, to walk ; *à jugár*, to play.

When before the adverbs or adverbial moods it denotes the manner in which an action is executed, as *à sabiéndas*, knowingly ; *à trúeco*, by changing ; rather purposely, *à brázo partido*, upon equal terms : *à* denotes likewise when a thing is to be done, as *à las doce del día*, at noon.

It is often an interjection, as *à señór fuláno*, ho there such a one ; *à señór Pédro*, ho there Peter.

It is taken for *con*, with, as *castíguese el oficial à pena capitál*, let the officer be punished with a capital punishment.

For *bácia*, towards, as *volvió la cabeça à tal parte*, he turned his head towards such a place.

For *pára*, for, as *condúce à éste fin*, it is proper for this end.

For *por*, by, as *à fuérza ganó la ciudad*, by force he gained the city.

For *según*, according, as *à la móda de Francia*, according to the French fashion.

For *si*, if, as *à saber esto*, if I knew this—, upon knowing of this.

For *sino*, if not, unless, as *à no venir à tiémpo*, if he should not come in time, &c.

For *en*, in, as *à vista de tal proceder que quiere que bága?* upon sight of such proceeding what will you have me to do ?

And tho' there are many authors who are of opinion, that *à* stands for the third person singular of the present tense indicative of the verb *haber*, to have, saying *aquéel á*, I say that then it is to be written with an *b* thus *aquéel bá*, observing the same in all the tenses and moods ; for *haber* is derived from the Latin verb *habere*, and regard being had to this there will happen no mistake or equivocation.

There are other authors who assert, that *à* stands for *bái*, there is, which is absolutely false ; for in the speeches which denote time, as *à un año que vine à Londres*,

*Lóndres*, it is a year since I came to London, à must be written with *b* thus *bá* abbreviated, or by the figure Apocope, because then it is the third person singular of the present tense indicative of the verb *hacer*, to do, and is the same as *báce un año que vine à Lóndres*, according to the rule.

*Apocope demit finem, quem dat Paragoge.*

But of these we shall speak more at large in another place.

### E.

E either is masculine, as in the last syllable of *amaré*, I shall love; *aprenderé*, I will learn; *enseñé*, I have taught; *oiré*, I shall hear, &c. or feminine, as *quándo amáre*, when I shall love; *quándo olvidáre*, when I shall forget; and it is so because the accent is not acute in these last examples.

Of the *è*, when before other vowels, may be formed four diphthongs.

*E* is sometimes used as a first person of the verb *haber*, but then it must be written with *b*, saying *yo he comprado un anillo de oro*, I have bought a gold ring.

It is often a conjunction, and is used instead of *y*, when the following word begins with *i* vowel, as *los Holandéses è Ingléses*, the Dutch and the English *España è Italia*, Spain and Italy.

Poets often take the liberty to add the letter *e* at the end of some words using the figure Paragoge, saying *amóre* for *amór*, love, and this they do for the sake of the rhyme.

*E* is sometimes an interjection, but then *b* must be added to it, as *bé, que dices?* ha! what do you say? *bé, que quierés?* ha! what you will have? it stands likewise for an adverb, as *bí, la mugér*, see! the woman.



## I. Y.

The *Latin i* stands for a vowel in the *Spanish* language, and the *y* for a consonant ; but when a strong aspiration is required in the pronunciation, then *j* serves as a consonant, as *yá*, already ; *jústo*, just.

When the accent is laid on the *i* as *leí*, *ví*, then it has a masculine pronunciation, and when not, a feminine one.

There are four diphthongs also formed from this vowel.

When *y* is by itself in a speech, it is generally a conjunction copulative, and sometimes suspensive, as *Juán y Pedro*, *y búyen*, *y córren*, *y peléan*, John and Peter, fly, run, and fight : But it must be observed, that when the following word begins with *i*, then by Euphonia *è* must be made use of instead of *y*, as *los Españóles è Italiános*, *Francésès è Inglésès*, the Spaniards and the Italian, the French and the English.

*I* or *y* are sometimes put instead of *abí*, there, but as this use is meerly voluntary it must be never used.

## O.

This letter is also pronounced sometimes with a masculine accent, as *amó*, he loved ; *respondió*, he answered.

Four diphthongs are formed of this letter, when it precedes other vowels.

When the *o* is by itself in a speech, it is often a conjunction disjunctive, as *ò sábio*, *ò ignorante*, *ò brávo*, *ò covarde*, *ba de venír*, *con mígo*, let him be wise, or ignorant, or brave, or a coward, he must come with me.

It is likewise an interjection, as *ò maldad !* *ò dolor !* O wickedness ! O pain ! but of this we shall speak more largely in another place.

As an adverb, as *ò si yo fuéra rico*, O that I were rich.

U is

## U.

*U* is sometimes pronounced with a masculine accent, as *tú*, *sú*, thou, his ; of it are likewise made four diphthongs.

When after a *g*, *u* is joined to *e* or *i*, then *u* loses its pronunciation ; and these words, *Guedéja*, a lock of hair ; *guía* a guide, are pronounced as in the English words of giddy, Guinea, or as in the French words *guerre*, war ; *guérir*, to cure. *Aguéro*, an omen ; *verguénza*, shame, &c. are excepted.

When it is by itself in a speech, then it is a conjunction, or interjection, instead of *o*, when the word following begins with an *o*, as *impediménto u obstáculo*, impediment or obstacle.

*Of the pronunciation of the Consonants.*

## B. b.

**T**HIS letter is pronounced as in other languages, closing the lips, and as if it had an *e* after it, as in the English word *Bay*.

As to the letter *b*, its difference, and similitude of pronunciation with the letter *v*, we must refer the reader to the 2d chapter as to its proper place.

## C, ç, Z.

*C* when before the letters *e i* is pronounced softer than *s*, as *cédro*, a cedar tree ; *cielo*, heaven : when before the vowels *a, o, u*, is pronounced as *k*, as *cára*, the face ; *comér*, to eat ; *cuérda*, a cord or rope.

When *b* follows the letter *c*, it is pronounced as in the English cheese, *quéso* ; child, *niño niña* ; thus are *cbánza*, a jest ; *cbocoláte*, chocolate ; *cbíco*, little, small ; *múcho*, much : these words excepted *cbaridád*, charity ; *cbóro*, a choir ; *Archángel*, an Archangel, &c. which  
are



are derived from the *Latin cbaritas, cborus, archangelus*, for *c* then is pronounced as *k*.

Upon the *Cedilla* formed with a small dash under it, I think it convenient to observe; first, that as by a resolution newly taken by the members of the Royal Academy at *Madrid*, the *ç* had been only invented to supply the defect of combination of *ce, ci*, in the three vowels *a, o, u*, in order to pronounce *ça, ço, çu*, instead of *ca, co, cu*; and this having taken place, and with the same softness as the *z*; the *ç* is reputed at present as superfluous; and the reason is, because *ç*, in the opinion of several authors, is not a different letter from the *z*, but the same differently formed, this being the reason why many authors have used both promiscuously, for their pronounciation are very much alike in these words, *çapatér, oza:atéro*, a shoe-maker; *cáça, cáza*, hunting, &c. Besides, because *ç* is not found in the mother tongues, and the *z* is; further the *z* is a general letter in the beginning, middle, and ending of any word, which cannot be said of the letter *ç*, for which reason, it often cannot be used in the middle of a word, and in the end never; no body having written as yet *almirantáçgo*, admiralty; *balláçgo*, a reward for a thing lost; *mereçco*, I deserve; *padeçco*, I do suffer; *desliç*, a slipping; *luç*, light; *paç*, peace; *veloç*, swift. Wherefore I am of opinion that *ç* is superfluous in the *Spanish* language, and as such it's use must be avoided, placing the *z* in it's stead in every word where *ç* used to be.

But as *ç* is found in most of the *Spanish* authors, I think it proper to acquaint the curious, that it's pronounciation is the same as that of *c* when before the vowels *e i*; because, as has been said, *ç* was invented to supply the combination in the vowels, *a, o, u*. And tho' a certain rule might be given to keep both the *ç* and the *z* in the said language, which is, to use the *ç* when a consonant precedes, as *alabánça*, a praise; *enseñança*, instruction, teaching, &c.

&c. and to use *z* when a vowel goes before, and in the beginning and end of words, as *altéza*, highness; *razón*, reason; *zélo*, zeal; *lúz*, light, &c. but as the foregoing opinion is better grounded, I think it more right to take away the *ç* and to use the *z*, as the modern authors do, whom I follow. *Z* is pronounced as the *English* pronounce the double *ff*.

D. d.

*D* has the same sound in *Spanish*, as in the *Latin* and other languages. And although there are several authors who are of opinion that *d* is not to be pronounced when at the end of a word, yet I am of a contrary opinion, and say that it always is to be pronounced if it is written, with this difference only, that when it ends a word, its sound is softer, laying the accent on the preceding vowel, as *amistád*, friendship; *bondád*, goodness, &c.

F f

Does not differ in its sound from that of the *Latin*, or of other languages; but it must be observed, that the *Spaniards* never use *ff* in their writings, as will be said afterwards, and if some do double them it is by way of a voluntary affectation. A certain author takes notice, that the *Spaniards* confound *f* with *ph*, or, to speak more proper, they use *f* instead of *ph*; I don't doubt but that in every nation there are ignorant people, but those who are skilled in Orthography ought to conform to the manner in which words are written in the original.

G. g. J. X.

*G* is only guttural before the vowels *e*, *i*, but *j* and *x* are always aspirated, or guttural letters in the whole combination of the vowels, because in the  
same



same manner is pronounced *ja, je, ji, jo, ju*, as *xa, xe, &c.* *x* is not guttural in some words derived from the *Latin*, as *eximír*, to exempt ; *exámen*, examination, &c. as it will be said in the 2d chapter, and when it goes before a consonant, as *excedér*, to exceed ; *excitár*, to excite ; *excluír*, to exclude ; *excremento*, excrement, &c.

G before the vowels *a, o, u*, is not aspirated or guttural, and is pronounced as in other languages, as *gállo*, a cock ; *gólpe*, a blow ; *gústó*, taste, pleasure. I cannot agree with some authors, who say, that when *g* comes before *n* it is sunk in the pronunciation, because the men of learning in *Spain* generally pronounce it, as in *Ignácio*, Ignatius ; *ignorár*, to be ignorant ; *ignóto*, unknown ; *magnánimo*, magnanimous ; *magnífico*, magnificent, &c.

## H.

*Jórdan*, *Martinianus*, *Tominque*, in his *Elench. Elem. P. II Art. III.* *Littleton* in his *Latin Dictionary* lett. *H*, and other authors are of opinion that *H* (called by *St Jerom* an extensive vowel) is a letter for the following reasons.

First, a Letter is nothing else than a note of a peculiar sound, and a single part of a syllable ; *h* is the same : therefore the *b* is a letter.

Secondly, The *b* comes originally from the *Hebrew* and *Greek* tongues ; it was a letter with them : why then should it not be the same in the living languages ? &c.

The *Spanish* authors place the *b* among the semi-vowels, because before and after it has a vowel in its pronunciation. See the abovesaid authors. But as the public has received the *b* with *Priscianus* as a note of aspiration and not as a letter, we must conform to it whether with reason or without it. *H* is generally pronounced so gently, that in many words it can scarce be perceived, as *bómbre*, a man ; *humilde*, humble ;

humble ; but when *ue* follows *b*, then *bu* is pronounced as the *English* *w* ; *búerta*, a garden ; *buésped*, an host or guest ; *buésso*, a bone : like *wérta*, *wésped*, *wéssó*.

*H* after *c* is pronounced as in *English*, *church*, *much*, *iglésia*, *múcho*. Although some authors observe, that the *Spaniards* very rarely use the *b* after *p* and *t*, I say, that the *Spanish* tongue does not allow them the liberty to do it, and thus the learned must conform themselves to the etymology of words, saying *Thomás*, Thomas ; *Tbeología*, Theology or Divinity ; *Philosophía*, Philosophy.

## K.

The *Spaniards* make use of this letter only in conformity to the etymology of the words derived from other languages, as *Kalendário*, a Kalendar ; *Kalendas*, Kalends, the first day of the month, *Kyrie eleison*, &c. Greek ; and in proper names of cities, towns, &c. at *Kelmo*, *Kenard*, *Kunigunda*, &c. Saxon.

## L. 1.

Besides the single *l*, there is a double *ll* in *Spanish* language as in the *Latin*, but differently pronounced : the single one is pronounced as in other languages, but the double *ll* as in the *Italian* *gl* in the words *Figli*, *Moglie*, &c. or as the double *ll* in *French* in the words *coquille*, *fille*, &c. which sounds as if an *i* was after the first *l*, as of *lláve*, a key ; *llover*, to rain ; *callár*, to be silent, read *liáve*, *liovér*, *caliár*. *L* is never doubled in the end of words.

It must be observed, that all words that have a double *l* in the *Latin*, are written in *Spanish* with a single one.

## M.

*M* is pronounced as in other languages, as *máno*, a hand ; *camino*, a way ; *mádre*, mother, &c. in what manner 'tis to be doubled, or when it is to be kept single



single in the composition we shall speak afterwards in chap. 3.

## N.

There are two *n*'s in the *Spanish* language, one which is common to all languages, and is pronounced alike with them ; another proper and peculiar to the *Spanish*, written thus *ñ*, which is equivalent to two *n n*, and is called *n con tilde*, and is pronounced as *gn* in *Italian* and *French*, or, as if it had an *i* after *n*, as in these words, *áño*, a year ; *niño*, a child ; *montaña*, a mountain ; saying thus, *agno* or *anio*, *nigno* or *ninio*, &c.

## P.

There is nothing to be observed in the letter *p*, but that its pronunciation is the same as in *Latin*, as *pán*, bread ; *Pédro*, Peter.

*Pb* are used as *f*, and pronounced in the same manner ; but that in writing *f* ought to be used for *pb* is an insupportable error : because with *pb* and not with *f* are to be written the following words, *Philósofo*, a Philosopher ; *Phyfico*, a Physician ; *Physiología*, Philosophy, &c.

The *Latin* *p* is often changed into *b*, as of *recipere*, *recebír*, to receive ; but of this we shall speak hereafter.

## Q.

*U* always follows this letter as in other languages, and is pronounced in the same manner. When *ui* follows after *q*, then it is pronounced as if there was a *k* instead of *qu*, saying *quinto*, *kinto*, fifth, *quince*, *kince*, fifteen ; but when it follows *ua* or *ue*, the *u* is pronounced, tho' not strong, as *questión*, a question ; *consequência*, a consequence ; *quátro*, four, &c. the following are excepted, *tóque*, let him touch or ring ;

ring ; *repique*, let him ring out ; *líquido*, liquid ; *que*, that ; *querér*, to be willing ; *quién*, who ; which are pronounced as if they were written with *k*.

## R

No way differs in it's sound from the *Latin* and *English* ; but it must be observed, that at the beginning of words it is pronounced stronger than at the middle and end, because the initial *r* is equal to two *r r*, which always are pronounced with vehemence.

## S.

S simple, as well as compound, is pronounced as in *Latin* : *cum amassem sanctos, como amásse los santos*, when I could love the saints ; *ò altíssimo Dios*, O most high God : from whence it may be inferred, that all the preterimperfects of the optative, and the superlatives, are written and accented as in the *Latin*.

S in the *Spanish* is doubled in words derived from the *Latin*, of which we shall give sufficient notice in its place, but never is doubled at the end of words ; and when they begin in the *Latin* with *s* to which follows a consonant as *c, m, p, t*, then is added an *e*, as from *scholasticus* say *escolástico* ; *scribere*, *escribir* ; *smaragdus*, *esmeralda* ; *spina*, *espina* ; *spiritus*, *espíritu*.

## T.

This letter is pronounced as in *Latin*, in the combination of all the vowels, as *Tácito, Taño, tenaz*, &c. still or quiet, the sense of feeling, tenacious, in the middle of several words *t* is changed into *c*, and especially in words ending in *tia* and *tio*, as from *beneficentia* say *beneficencia*, from *essentia*, *essencia* ; *justitia*, *justicia*, &c. beneficence, essence, justice.

There



There is no double *t* in the *Spanish* language.

When the original words have *tb*, they are to be written in the same manner in the *Spanish*; as *Cátbedra*, *Catbólico*, *Matbéo*, *Theología*, pronouncing the *tb* as a single *t*.

## X.

This is a guttural letter. Vid. Let. G.

I do only observe here, that all the *Spanish* words that begin with *x* are *Arabick*, except the following that come from the *Greek*, *Xantbénia*, a precious stone like amber in its colour; *Xánto*, a precious stone of a very yellow colour; *Xeníolo*, a small gift; *Xenodóchio*, an hospice, or an inn for strangers; *Xenón*, an habitation, a dwelling-place, a lodging; *Xenopárochos*, officers appointed to provide for the Ambassadors; *Xyrotbéca*, the case wherein the Barbers put their razors and scissars; *Xysto*, a gallery, a summer-house, or an open place to take the air about a garden.

Y. Vid. Let. I.

Z. Vid. Let. C.

## C H A P. II.

*Of the letters when in composition.*

**T**H E only and sure rule to reduce the *Castilian* language in perfection, is to write it as it is spoke, and really pronounced; it is by this only that it is distinguished, and exceeds all other languages, not excepting the *Latin*; I have said the *Latin*, because that language joins the diphthongs, pronouncing only one letter, when they are wrote with two as *Cælum* is pronounced *Celum*: but the  
*Castilian*

*Castellan* pronounces its diphthongs in such a manner, that without losing a letter it preserves the sound of both vowels in one syllable, as *alcáide*, *áire*, *réy*, *léy*, *buéy*, &c. this being agreeable to the sense which the Antients gave of the word *diphthong*, defining it thus: *Diphthongus est duarum in una syllaba vocalium sonus perceptus*, a diphthong is the distinct sound of two vowels in one syllable; for which reason I am of opinion, that the Antients pronounced *Latin* in the same manner that the *Spanish* is now pronounced; and if it was not foreign to my present purpose, I would prove clearly the time when and how the *Latin* pronunciation has been corrupted, and by what means the syneresis in the diphthongs was introduced, but as this suffices for the present, I shall proceed in my design.

In order to form the Orthography, it is necessary to observe the modifications by which time has smoothed the roughness of words, and reduced them to the modern stile and manner of discourse: But as there are many, who manage the *Castilian* tongue in proportion to their genius, confounding letters together in their pronunciation, and using the consonants at their pleasure; to avoid such abuse it is proper to know,

That the springs from whence flow such variety and confusion in the Orthography are the following. First, the similitude of the pronunciation of some letters, whose use is so uncertain, that they are often mixed, and by the meer pronunciation it is difficult to distinguish their proper use: such are the *B* and *V* consonant, the *C* and the *Z* in the proper combinations, and in those of the *C*, in the two vowels *e* and *i*, the *G*, *J*, and *X* in the two vowels *e*, *i*, the *J* and *X* in their entire combinations; the *C* and the *Q*, and the *G* and *H*, in the combinations where the *u* interposes. Secondly, the use of the double consonants, which are commonly found in compound words, as *accesión*, *immortál*, *annotár*,  
C *arreglár*,



*arreglár, dissimulár, &c.* Thirdly, the use of many consonants which come together in various words, as *assumpto, sanctidad, demonstración, redención, &c.* This being supposed.

I say, first, that the *B* ought not to be pronounced and written instead of the *V*, nor the *V* be confounded with the *B*; since every one knows that they are different letters, and therefore it is absolutely necessary that their sound should be likewise different. To surmount this difficulty, regard must be had to the original from whence proceed the words in which these letters are found, because if they are derived from a word written with a *B*, as *Baculus, Beatus, Beneficium, bibere, bonus, &c.* they must be written with a *B*; and if from a word written with a *V*, they must be wrote so; as *Vácuo, valér, váno, vapór, vendér, venír, vída, &c.* which are derived from the Latin *vacuus, valere, vapor, vendere, venire, vita.*

For which reason all the preterimperfects of the indicative mood must be wrote with *B*, and not with *V*, as is usual, saying, *amába, cantába, bablába, orába*, because they come from the Latin *amabam, cantabam, loquebar, orabam.*

It must be observed likewise, that when in the original of a word there is a *P*, then the *B* must be used and not the *V*, because from *caput, concipere, lupus, sapiens, &c.* comes *cabéza, concebír, lóbo, sábíbo.*

Before the letters *L* and *R*, the *B* must always be put and not the *V*, saying *amáble, dáble, dóble, bablar, abrír, brávo, Hómbre, Póbre.*

Therefore that barbarous distinction ought to be avoided which ignorance has introduced, viz. that there must not be two *B B*'s or two *V V*'s in one word; because, if they are in the root they ought to be used, as in *Bárba, Bebér, Bárbaro, vivacidad, vivir, viviente, volver, &c.*

And when the original of words is doubtful, I am of opinion that we ought to use the *B*, and not the *V*, the pronunciation of the first being more agreeable to our manner of speaking than that of the second.

I say, 2dly, that the *ç* called *cedilla*, is now superfluous in the *Spanish* tongue, and therefore the *Z* ought to be used in its stead, in all words whatsoever, as was said in chap. 1. Lett. C.

But it ought to be taken notice of, that the words ending in *Z* which are derived from the *Latin*, ought to change the *Z* into *C* in the plural, because it is so found in the original, and thus *felíz*, *luz*, *páz*, *véz*, *vóz*, make in the plural *felíces*, *lúces*, *páces*, *véces*, *vóces*.

Hitherto has been written *bazér*, *dezír*, but these verbs being derived from *facere* and *dicere*, now the *Z* is changed into *C*, conformable to the original, and now we say *bacér*, *decír*, observing the same rule in all their derivatives.

I say, 3dly, that *G* being guttural only before the *e* and *i*, it ought to be used only in the primitives and derivatives, such are *affigír*, *cogér*, *colegír*, *elegír*, *protegér*, *regír*, &c. writing *aflíge*, *cóge*, *colíge*, *elíge*, *protége*, *ríge*, without being extended to the derivatives of *j* and *x*.

When the infinitives in *gér* or *gír* change *ér* or *ír* into *a* or *o* as in the present, then the *G* is changed into *j*, that the true pronunciation of the infinitive may be preserved; and thus from *figír* say *fínjo*, *fínja*, from *Regír*, *Ríjo*, *Ríja*, &c.

All words which in their original have *g*, *i*, or *l*, are written with *j* and not with *x*, as from *longe* say *léjos* from *Tagus*, *Tájo*; from *tegula*, *téja*; *jaſtancia*, *jaſtancia*; *jaſpis*, *jáſpe*; *jurare*, *jurár*; *juſtitia*, *juſticia*; *juvenis*, *jóven*; from *conſilium*, *conſejo*; *Filius*, *Híjo*; *melior*, *mejór*, in all the combination of the vowels; and when the infinitives end in *jar*, the *j* must be kept in all the tenses without exception.



In these words *Magestád*, *Mugér*, *Tráge*, &c. common use has prevailed in keeping the *g* instead of the *j*.

If the words have *x* in their original, as *Texér*, *exémpló*, *execución*, *perpléxo*, *vexíga*, &c. it would appear ridiculous to write them with *j*, and not with *x*; and it must be likewise observed, that when the words have the letter *f* in their original, as *cáxa*, *dexár*, *xabón*, *xémé*, *xúgo*, &c. derived from *cap-sa*, *deferere*, *sapo*, *semipes*, *succus*, are to be written always with *x* and not with *j*; and the reason of it is, because the *f* has the sound somewhat like the *x*, and as the *Spaniards* do take the guttural pronunciation from the *Arabians*, and they pronounce the double *ff* as *x*, it cannot be absurd to change *f* into *x*.

Nouns ending in *x*, as *Bóx*, *Baláx*, *Relóx*, &c. keep the *x* in the plural; as well as all the verbs, which have *x* in the infinitive mood are to keep it in all the tenses, as from *baxár*, *dexár*, &c. say *báxo*, *baxába*, *Baxé*. &c.

*Q* is frequently in vulgar writings changed into *C*, but the true rule is to be guided by the original *Latin*: otherwise the derivation is obscured, and the pronunciation corrupted; from *C* are formed *cuájo*, *cuénta*, *cuérda*, &c. and from *Q* *quál*, *questión*, *quátro*, &c.

It is an impropriety, that many fall into of using *u* and *i* vowels instead of *y* and *v* consonants: but this irregularity is cautiously avoided by all correct writers, and exploded by the *Spanish Academy*; having established the letter *y* to be always a consonant in the *Spanish* words, and the accent is always laid on the annexed vowel, as *ayúda*, help; *ayúno*, a fast; *arróyo*, a rivulet, or a brook. It must be likewise avoided to put the *y* immediately before or after a consonant, or at the end of a verb or word, except the following *Léy*, *Réy*, *Buéy*, &c.

The *Spaniards*, to retain the softness of the sound of the *Latin* consonant *j*, for want of an exact equivalent, change it into *y* consonant, as in *adjuvare*, *jejunare*, *jacere*, which the *Spaniards* make *ayudár*, *ayunár*, *yacér* : and in conformity to the *Greek*, in words borrowed from that language, they preserve it as a vowel, Σύμβολον, Μυστήριον, ἄζυμο, Μάρτυρ. *Symbolo*, *Mystério*, *ázyμο*, *Mártyr*. So likewise in the third conjugation of verbs, as *argúyo*, *argúyes*, *argúye*, I dispute, &c. but in the imperfect say thus : *arguía*, &c. the accent being to be put on the vowels and never on consonants, the same is the first person of the preterperfect, as *arguí*, I disputed, &c. the *Spaniards* likewise say at present, *dói*, I give ; *estói*, I am ; *bói*, to day, &c.

### C H A P. III.

#### *Of the use of letters doubled.*

**E** and **O** are often doubled in *Spanish*, to come the nearer to the radical pronunciation, as *Acree-dór*, *Creér*, *Leér*, *Cooperár*, *Loór* : in which both the vowels are pronounced distinctly. And it is on the contrary, wrong in some, who superfluously add *e* in words derived from the *Latin*, as in *Fee*, *Veer*, instead of *Fé*, *Vér*.

As to consonants, the variety is great, but to avoid all affectation, and speak properly it is to be observed, that *C* is never to be doubled before the vowels *A*, *O*, *U*, or before consonants, and we therefore write *Acaécer*, *Acomodár*, *Ocáso*, *Ocasión*, *Acusár*, *Acumulár*, *Aclamár*, &c. But before the vowels *E* and *I*, *C* is doubled in such words as are derived from the *Latin*, and had them originally, as *Accelerár*, *Accéso*, *Accénto*, *Occidente*, except the following words *Aceptár* and *Sucedér*,



because altho' in their original they have two *c c*, they are not specified in the pronunciation by the *Spaniards*.

*Latin* words terminating in *Etio*, change the *t* into *C*, as *Acción*, *Cocción*, *Dicción*, *Lección*, *Producción*. And if either of these two *C*'s were omitted, the derivation would be the less evident.

*M* and not *N* is always to be made use of before *B*, *M*, *P*, as *Ambiente*, *immortal*, *império*.

Words compounded of the *Latin* prepositions *In* and *Con*, follow the *Latin* rule of turning *In* into *Im*, and *Con* into *Com*, as *Immaculado*, *Inmediato*, *Immemorial*, *Immortal*, &c. *Comensurar*, *Comover*, *Comutar*, &c. In all which words the *M* is doubled, tho' in several other common words one *M* is lost, as *Comercio*, *Común*, *comunion*, &c. Some change *Im* into *Em*, as *Emmascarado*, *emmagrecer*, *Emmudecer*, &c.

*N* is likewise doubled in several words compounded with *An*, *En*, *In*, *Con*, as *Annexión*, *Annotar*, *Connatural*, *Connexión*, *Ennegrecer*, *Ennoblecér*, *Innato*, *Innocente*, *Innovar*, &c. except *Anular*, *Anunciar*, *Anillo*, &c.

The letter *R* is doubled in the words that have a strong pronunciation in the middle ; as *Aborro*, *Borra*, *Error*, *Guerra*, *Pérro*, &c. Those words that have one *r* in the middle are pronounced softly, as *ára*, an altar ; *aréna*, sand ; *íra*, wrath. There is no word in the *Spanish* language that begins or ends with two *r r*, but the initial *R* has always a strong sound, as *rabia*, rage ; *razón*, reason ; *reclór*, rector ; *reñir*, to quarrel, &c. it must be observed, that when any consonant precedes the *R*, then *R* is never doubled, and it would look but barbarous to write these words with two *r r*, *bónra*, honour ; *bonróso*, honourable ; *enriquecer*, to grow rich, &c. because the preceding consonant makes the pronunciation strong, so that the *r* is only to be doubled when between two vowels, as *tierra*, earth ; *errór*, an error.

S is to be doubled in the words that have two *ff* in their original, as *assár*, to roast; *cessár*, to cease; *essencia*, essence; *necessidád*, necessity; the same is to be observed in the second preterimperfect of the subjunctive mood, as *amásse*, I might love; *enseñásse*, I might teach; *buviéssse*, I might have: in all the superlatives, as *amantíssimo*, most loving; *beatíssimo*, most holy, most happy; *doctíssimo*, most learned; and in adverbs superlatives, as *doctíssimamente*, wisely; so are the words *accéssso*, access; *congréssso*, congress; *excessso*, excess; *progréssso*, progress; and all the compounds of simple words that begin with *s*, as of *saltár*, to jump, comes *assaltár*, to assault; of *sentír*, to be sensible, or to feel, comes *assentír*, to assent, of *sústto*, fright, comes *assustár*, to frighten.

The two *l l*, which in *Spanish* have a peculiar pronunciation, are doubled before the vowels *a*, *e*, *o*, *u*, when in Latin *c*, *f*, *p*, &c. precedes *l*, as *lláno*, plain; *llánto*, crying, grief; *lláve*, a key; *lláma*, flame; *lléno*, full; *llorár*, to cry; *llover*, to rain; *lluvia*, rain; as it will be said at large in the treating of the formation of the *Spanish* words from the *Latin*, which will be put at the end of this Grammar.

The said consonants only are to be doubled in the *Spanish* tongue, because no body now pronounces two *bb*, two *dd*, two *ff*, two *gg*, two Latin *ll*, two *pp*, two *tt*, nor double *w*. This is the method newly taken of the Royal Academy of *Madrid*, and this is that which the modern authors follow.



## C H A P. IV.

*Of the rules that are to be observed upon the concurrence of divers consonants.*

**F**ROM two to four are the consonants, which occur together between two vowels, of which there is some diversity in writing, which varies from the manner in which they are pronounced, and are *BST*, *BSTR*; *CT*, *CTR*; *MPC*, *MPT*; *NCT*, *NSC*, *NSCR*, *NSP*, *NST*, *NSTR*; *SC*; *XC*, *XCL*, *XPL*, *XPR*, *XQ*, *XT*, *XT R*; to understand which observe the following rules.

Rule I. The letters *BST* and *BSTR* are to be pronounced in all the words in which they occur, according to their original, as *abstenér*, to abstain; *abstinencia*, abstinence; *obstáculo*, obstacle; *substituir*, to substitute; *abstrabér*, to make an abstract; *abstrácto*, an abstract; because they are all distinctly pronounced in the *Spanish*.

Rule II. *CT*, and *CTR*, are also to be pronounced and written as in the original, as *dócto*, learned; *doctór*, doctor; *récto*, right; *doctrina*, doctrine; *pléctro*, a quill, used to play upon the strings of a harp; and this without any exception, otherwise it would appear an affectation.

Rule III. In the words in which concur *MPC* and *MPT* the letter *P* is lost, because it is not really pronounced in *assumpción*, assumption; *exempción*, exemption; *redempción*, *redemptór*, *promptitud*, &c. so that they are to be written thus *assunción*, &c.

I cannot pass over an observation which occurs to me here, and is that the gentleman of the Academy change *MP* into *N*, being of opinion that the said words are to pronounced thus *assunción*, *redención*; for which resolution I cannot see nor find any other foundation,

foundation, than the mere affectation of pronouncing *M* as *N* (an abuse which I observed when at *Madrid*) confounding in it not only the *Spanish* but even the pronunciation of the *Latin* tongue: I say, that I observed many to 'pronounce the words of Transubstantiation thus: *boc est enim corpus meum*, instead of saying with distinction and clearness, *boc est enim corpus meum*. I can't but be much surprised that an academic body, and such as that of the Royal Academy of *Madrid* composed of persons of such learning and eminency, had taken no notice of the like abuse, and to give to the *M* the pronunciation as they ought in the combination of all the vowels, there being no reason to make the least alteration in it.

Rule IV. When *nē* occur together in *Latin*, all the letters are often preserved in *Spanish* in writing, but the *c* is hardly, if at all pronounced in speaking, as *sáñcto*, *sanctidád*, *distíncto*, *púncto*, &c. write *sáñto*, *santidád*, &c.

*N S C* and *N S C R* are to be pronounced in the words where they are found, as *transcendentál*, *conscripto*, *inscripto*, this word *consciencia* excepted, in which the *s* is not specified.

*N S P* and *N S T* are retained in the *Spanish*, as *conspiración*, *transparénte*, *transposición*, *transportár*, *transplantár*, *constár*, *constancia*, *constitución*, *institución*, &c. the use of the letters *N S T R* must be kept in the words *constreñír*, *construír*, *construcción*, *demonstráble*, *demonstración*, *instruír*, *instrucción*, *ménstruo*, *mónstruo*, &c. which otherwise happens in *mostrár*, *mostradór*, *mostréñco*, and their derivations in which *n* is omitted.

*N. B.* It is to be observed by the by, that the *n* is lost in these words *Trasteár*, *Trasladár*, *Trasládo*, *Trastucír*, *Trasnochár*, *Traspalar*, *Traspáñso*, *Trastrocár*, for the reason of being so admitted: but is preserved in the following *Transferír*, *Transfiguración*,  
*Transgressión*,



26      *The RUDIMENTS of*  
*Trafgeſſión, Tranſlación, Tranſmigración, Tranſmulár,*  
*Transformár, Tranſubſtanciación, Tranſverſál.*

Rule V. The two conſonants S C are to be retained in thoſe words, in which the vowels *a* or *u* follows them, as *eſcála, eſcáma, eſcóta, eſcuéla, eſcória, Peſcádo, Peſcuézo*: and although the *s* is not pronounced in the words *apacentár, adolecér, conciéncia, ciéncia, conócér, erécér, florecér, pactér*, yet it is retained in *aſcendér, aſcendéncia, aſcendénte, adoleſcéncia, condeſcendér, deſcendér, deſceñír, aquieſcéncia, diſceptación, diſcernír, diſciplína, diſcípulo, miſcelánea*.

Rule VI. X C, when between two vowels, are to be pronounced if they are ſo in the original, as *excélſo, éxcelénte, excídio, excommunióu, excúſa, excuſár, &c.* without exception. The like is to be obſerved in the concurrence of X C L and X C R, as *exelamár, excluír, excremento, &c.* as likewise when after *x* follow *p* alone, *pl*, or *pr*, as *experiéncia, expoſición, explanár, explicár, explorár, exprimir*. And laſtly, when *q* or *t* follow *x* their original is to be attended to, as *exquiſito, extendér, exterioridád, extinguir; extrabér, extrémó, extrangéro, extraordinário, &c.*

## C H A P. V.

### *Of the Diphtongs.*

**T**H E concurrence of two vowels, which compoſe but one ſyllable, is ſo frequent in the *Spaniſh* tongue, that the like is hardly to be found in any other. For tho' the vowels are but five, yet they admit twenty combinations; to which *Anthony de*

*de Nebríxa*, in his treatise of the Spanish Orthography, gives the name of diphthongs ; *Valéra*, *Sandoval*, on the Rudiments of the Grammar, and several other authors are of the same opinion, tho' *Renfígo* in his poetical treatise attributes the joining of the two vowels in one syllable to the figure Syneresis. But as it is said in the 2d chapter, a diphthong is a perceptible sound of the two vowels in one syllable, and as in the following examples, the combination of the vowels make only one syllable in the Spanish tongue, they are admitted as diphthongs, and both vowels pronounced with some distinction, and a perceptible sound, viz.

In *ae*, as *acaecimiénto*, accident ; *albalaes*, a sort of bills of the court of justice.

In *ai*, as *aire*, air ; *alcáide*, a governor of a castle.

In *ao*, as *chaos*, a confusion ; *daos*, do ye give, or give ye.

In *au*, as *causa*, cause ; *cautela*, caution.

In *ea*, as *beatitud*, blessedness, holiness ; *sea* from *ser*, to be, pres. optative.

In *ei* or *ey*, as *péine*, a comb ; *reino*, a kingdom ; *ley*, the law ; *rey*, king.

In *eo*, as *Geometría*, Geometry ; *beodéz*, drunkenness.

In *eu*, as *déuda*, a debt ; *féudo*, a fief.

In *ia*, as *liadura*, a binding ; *súfia* or *súzia*, a foul dirty thing.

In *ie*, as *Cielo*, Heaven ; *miédo*, fear.

In *io*, as *súfio*, adj. dirty, foul ; *dió*, he gave.

In *iu*, as *ciudad*, a city ; *viudo*, a widower.

In *oa*, as *loa*, praise ; *loable*, praise-worthy.

In *oi*, as *dói*, I give ; *bói*, this day ; *sei*, I am.

In *oe*, as *béroe*, an hero ; *roedúra*, a gnawing.

In *ou*, as *Continño*, the surname of a family, or a shed in a park ; *Móura*, a town, or a surname of a family.

In



## 28 *The RUDIMENTS of*

In *ua*, as *quál*, which ; *cuájo*, rennet to make cheese.

In *ue*, as *buéno*, good ; *fuégo*, fire.

In *ui*, as *búitre*, a vulture ; *cuidádo*, care.

In *uo*, as *águo*, I water, or mix water to wine, &c. *mútuo*, mutual.

But it must be observed, that not always the two vowels tho' joined together compose one syllable or a diphthong : because when the accent is put on the last, then they form two vowels, *cáe*, *bói*, *ráe*, *mútuo* are monosyllables, and the same vowels in *caér*, *oí*, *raér*, *mutuó* make two syllables.

It must be noted also, that in the concurrence of those vowels, the *i* is always the *Latin* one, and not *y* ; and so it would be a notorious error to make use of the *y* in these words, writing *áyre*, *búytre*, *réyno*, *toyfón*, when they are to be written thus *áire*, *búitre*, &c. because the *i* does not strike as the *y* on another vowel : except from this rule all the nouns terminated in *y* which in plural is made consonant, *réyes*, *léyes*, *buéyes*.

### *Of Triphthongs.*

**A** Triphthong is the sounding of three vowels put together in one syllable, and are five in *Spanish*, viz.

In *iai*, as *decíais*, ye did say ; *bebíais*, ye were drinking.

In *iao*, as *avíaos*, make ye ready ; *precíaos*, let ye be valued.

In *iei*, as *envicíeis*, that you may corrupt ; *sentencíeis*, that you may give sentence.

In *uai*, as *agúais*, ye put water into the liquor ; *gúai*, a lass.

In *uei*, as *juguéis*, that ye may play ; *bueitre* for *buitre*, a vulture.

There

There are some authors who add another diphthong of *iue*, but in this they must be deceived, because the *i* or *u* in the nouns where *iue* is found, are consonants, as *Arroyuelo*, a little brook; *vive*, live thou.

---

## CHAP. VI.

### *Of the Accents, &c.*

**A**CCENTS are tones in speaking, of which there are two sorts in *Spanish*, the *Grave* and *Acute*. *Grave* is that which descends obliquely from the left to the right thus ` , and is only used in the *Spanish* language on the four vowels *à, è, ò, ù*, when each is separate, and makes a perfect sense by itself. *Acute* is that which descends from the right to the left thus ´ , and serves to prolong, make acute and strong the pronunciation, as *arnés*, armour; *amó*, he loved; *amará*, he will love; and it is also used to denote the quantity of the syllable.

But the most common use of the acute is to shew upon what syllable the strength of the pronunciation lies, for some words quite alter their signification according to the placing of the accent; as *cántara*, a sort of measure or pitcher; *cantára*, I would sing; *cantará*, he will sing; *libro*, a book; *libró*, he delivered, discharged, or gave a bill. When two or three consonants follow a vowel, there is no necessity to mark the accent upon it, their pronunciation being long by nature: the words whose consonants are mute or liquid are excepted, as *árbitro*, an arbitrator; *cátedra*, a chair in which a professor teaches



teaches any science ; *lúgubre*, mournful ; the same is to be observed in the words called *esdrúxulos*, dactyles ; as *águila*, an eagle ; *música*, musick ; *máximo*, greatest ; which have the accent in the antepenultima. From whence is inferred, how erroneous is the opinion of those who make use of the Grave accent instead of the Acute, without understanding the sense of these words ; because the accent Grave never makes a syllable long, but depresses and moderates the pronunciation.

To clear these things, and that it may be known where the accent might be laid on the *Spanish* words, I insert here the following rules.

### R U L E I.

All *Spanish* words are derived from the *Latin*, have their accent on the same syllable as in the *Latin* words, when in the ablative case of the singular, (because, as I intend to say hereafter, the *Spanish* words are formed from the ablative singular of the *Latin* words) except when they retain the *Latin* nominative, as *fenix*, *régimen*, *sál*, &c. viz.

Latin.	Spanish.	English.
<i>Aquila,</i>	<i>Aguila,</i>	an Eagle.
<i>Amicus,</i>	<i>Amigo,</i>	a Friend.
<i>Baculum,</i>	<i>Baculo,</i>	a Staff.
<i>Clericus,</i>	<i>Clérigo,</i>	a Clergyman.
<i>Limes,</i>	<i>Límite,</i>	a Limit, or Bound.
<i>Pontifex,</i>	<i>Pontífice,</i>	a Pontiff, the Pope.
<i>Prudens,</i>	<i>Prudente,</i>	Prudent.
<i>Spiritus,</i>	<i>Espíritu,</i>	a Spirit.
<i>Terminus,</i>	<i>Término,</i>	a Term, or Limit.
<i>Vapor,</i>	<i>Vapór,</i>	a Vapor.

All the superlatives in *íssimo*, and *íssima*, have their accent in the antepenultima in *Latin*, as *aman-*  
*tíssimo-ma,*

*tiſſimo-ma*, moſt loved; *caſtiſſimo-ma*, moſt chaſte; *beatíſſimo-ma*, moſt holy, &c. add to theſe *ínfimo*, loweſt, meaneſt, *íntimo*, intimate; *máximo*, great-eſt; *mínimo*, the leaſt; *óptimo*, beſt; *próximo*, neareſt neighbour; *último*, utmoſt, laſt, &c.

Rule II. *Of the penultima ſyllable.*

**A**LL words ending in *ía*, which denote ſome office, quality, paſſions of mind, place, or an aggregation of ſeveral things, have their accent on the penultima, as

<i>Alcaldía</i> , the office of a magiſtrate.	<i>Hospedería</i> , a place to entertain ſtrangers in, &c.
<i>Alegría</i> , mirth, &c.	<i>Panadería</i> , a baker's- ſhop.
<i>Clericía</i> , the clergy.	<i>Mejoría</i> , growing bet- ter.
<i>Especería</i> , a grocer's ſhop.	<i>Menoría</i> , minority.
<i>Enfermería</i> , an apart- ment for the ſick.	<i>Señoría</i> , lordſhip.
<i>Librería</i> , a library.	
<i>Herrería</i> , a ſmith's ſhop.	

Of this kind are the words that have any of theſe vowels *a, e, o, u*, before another vowel in the penultima, as

<i>Albacéa</i> , an executor of a will.	<i>Grangéo</i> , gain, purchaſe, &c.
<i>Aldéa</i> , a village.	<i>Livrée</i> , livery.
<i>Bilbáo</i> , Bilboa.	<i>Lóa</i> , praiſe.
<i>Boléo</i> , the flight of a ball.	<i>Píca</i> , a ſoldier's pike, or a fiſh ſo called.
<i>Corréa</i> , a leather ſtrap.	<i>Regadéo</i> , merry-making, &c.
<i>Corréo</i> , a poſt-mail.	
<i>Floréo</i> , a flouriſh.	

Except



Except *área*, an area ; *frámea*, a dart ; *foráneo*, belonging to the court of judicature ; *idóneo*, apt ; *incorpóreo*, incorporeal ; *mónstruo*, a monster, &c. which have the accent in antepenultima.

To this rule belong, all the words which carry the diphthongs in the penultima, as

*Amáine*, let him strike fail ; *báile*, a ball, *náipes*, playing cards ; *apláuso*, applause, &c. without exception.

The diminutives do likewise belong to this rule, as *asníco*, *asnillo*, a little ass ; *boníco*, *bonito*, somewhat pretty, &c.

### Rule III. *Of the last syllable.*

**A** L L nouns ending in *d, i, l, n, r, s, x, z*, have their accent on the last syllable, as those in

B. *Abád*, an Abbot ; *beldád*, beauty ; except *áspid*, an asp ; *buésped*, an host, a landlord.

I. *Albelí*, a clove-gilliflower-violet, *bocací*, buckram, &c. except *cási*, almost.

L. *animál*, *caracól*, a snail ; *generál*, except *ágil*, nimble, active ; *ángel*, angel ; *apóstol*, apostle, *cónsul*, consul ; *fácil*, easy ; *defícil*, difficult, &c.

N. *Asán*, labour, weariness ; *almidón*, starch ; except *crímen*, crime ; *exámen*, examination ; *imágen*, an image ; *jóven*, youth ; *márgen*, margin ; *órden*, order ; and other *Latin* words.

R. *Amór*, love ; *mugér*, a woman ; except *acíbar*, aloes ; *alcázar*, a castle, palace ; *almíbar*, sugar, boiled to a consistence, *ánsar*, a goose, &c.

S. *Ambargrís*, ambergreese ; *anís*, anniseed ; except *ánte*, rather ; *árlos*, shrubs ; *agátas*, on all four like a cat ; *a sabiéndas*, knowingly, designedly ; *de brúces*, with the mouth downwards ; *en-tonces*, then, &c.

X. *Almoradúz*, the sweet marjoram ; *baláx*, a precious stone, &c. without exception.

Z. *Arcadúz*, aqueduct ; *Albornóz*, a sort of upper garment used by the Moors, &c. except *Alférez*, an ensign, &c.

All adverbs of place have their accent on the last syllable, as *acá*, hither ; *aculiá*, yonder ; *allá*, thither ; *allí*, there ; *dó*, where ; *adó*, to what place ; *dedó*, from whence ; *aquí*, here, &c. and the following words : *albalá*, a sort of writing ; *Alcalá*, a name of a city in Spain, &c.

As the accent will be put upon the verb through all their tenses and moods, according to order in the conjugations, it will be needless to speak of them here.

## CHAP. VII.

### *Of the manner of Pointing.*

**T**HE want of distinctions in clauses makes writing very imperfect, and to put them in an improper place, causes such *equivocation* in the sense, that this sense either is not understood, or at least is confounded. For which reason, and for the proper division of words, and clauses of periods and speeches ; it must be known, that there are eight signs, notes, or particles, used to this purpose.

1. *Comma, subdistinction*, encise, or a stroke formed thus ( , ) and so called to denote the half suspension, or pause, which denotes the expectation of something else to follow ; it serves likewise distinctly



distinctly to separate one clause from another, as *Felicidad es de un Réino tener un Príncipe sábio, que abraze lo buéno, y evite lo málo, baciéndo justícia à todos*, it is a happiness to a kingdom to have a wise Prince, that embraces the good, and shuns evil, doing justice to every body.

2. A full stop formed thus ( . ) serves to denote, that the period is quite formed, and that the speech is perfectly concluded: as *nádie se alabe, bastaque acábe*. Let no body praise himself, till he gets what he is about. *Albricias mádre, que pregónan a mi pádre*, give me something mother for my good news, for they are crying my father; said of people that mistake good news for bad, or rejoice in other's misfortunes.

3. Comma and a point thus ( ; ) formed; (called by the *Greeks* an imperfect Colon, or Semicolon) is used to denote the implication and contradiction of things in the speech, or that they differ, as *los Pádres son dignos de reveréncia; Pero Dios de adoración*, Fathers deserve a reverence or respect; but God worship. *Pédro es sábio; pero su sobérbia le deslúce*. Peter is a wise man; but his pride dishonours him.

4. Two points (called by the *Greeks* a perfect Colon) marked thus ( : ) serve to denote that the sense is not perfectly expressed in the speech, and that there is something wanting to perfect it: as *no bacér mal algúno es innocencia: no bacér mal à ótro es justícia*, to do no evil is innocence: but justice to wrong no body. *La injúria si es verdád, tómala por adverténcia: si es mentíra, por crédito*, the injury if it is true, take it as a warning: if false, for reputation and credit.

5. Note of Interrogation formed thus ( ? ) denotes that something is asked or questioned: as *à donde vás?* where you are going? &c.

6. A note of Admiration thus ( ! ) expresses the affection of mind and surprise caused by a sudden

news or consideration of something : as *O Cielos !*  
*O Heaven !* *ò bondad divina !* *O divine goodness !*  
*ò tiempos !* *O times !* *ò vicios !* *O vices !* *ò costum-*  
*bres !* *O customs !* *ò depravados siglos !* *O corrupted*  
*age !*

7. A Parenthesis thus ( ) serves to separate a clause, without which the speech may have a perfect sense, to the end that it may be more plain, and to avoid confusion : as *el ministro sábio (que juntamente es desinteresado) es digno de toda alabanza*, a wise minister (who is altogether disinterested) is worthy of every body's praise.

8. Dieresis thus : ( " ) is a *Greek* word (called by the Printers *Crema*, and signifies a severing or division) and serves to separate two vowels which might be joined in one syllable, and to note that both are to be pronounced plainly and with distinction. Anciently this mark was put upon the *u*, and *i* vowels, when before another vowel ; because there was no difference made in writing between the *i* and *u*, to shew when they ought to be vowels and when consonants ; now this division is to be put on the *u* : as *eloqüente*, eloquent ; *frequencia*, frequency. And this only in the words where *u* is pronounced plainly and openly ; so that there is no need of a Dieresis in these *guerra*, war ; *guía*, guide ; *guinda*, a common cherry ; *quince*, fifteen.

To these add the note of Division or stroke figured thus ( - ) which is put at the end of a line, when the word is divided or cut, that it may be known that it is not finished : as in these (carefully dividing each syllable as children in spelling) *á-nimo*, *áni-mo*, courage, mind ; it cannot be divided thus : *án-imo*, nor thus *anim-o* : in the words where two *ss*, *rr*, &c. are found, then the first consonant is pronounced with the preceding vowel, and the second with the following, and so *accidente*, accident ; and



*bonísimo*, the best, the most pretty or better are to be divided thus *ac-cidente* or *acciden-te*, *bonis-simo*.

Apostrophe is a stroke put over some letters to denote that another letter, which ought to be there, is left out, and lost by the figure *Synalépbe* of the following vowel: as *d'el* of him, *del'água*, of water; *qu'éra*, which was; *s'omíte*, it is omitted. Which manner is much used in the *English*, and *French* languages; and tho' in old *Spanish* books it is often observed, yet common use has left it off in the *Spanish* language, as an insignificant thing, which often confounds; so that by joining the letters are single words formed, saying *del*, *essótro*, the other; *estótro*, this other; or writing the two *ee* or *ea* for better intelligence, thus *de el*, *esse ótro*, *éste ótro*, *que éra*, *se ofende*, &c.

*Of the use of capital letters.*

**W** I T H capital letters are to begin any writing, paragraph, period, or speech, after a final point; all the proper names, as well of persons, provinces, kingdoms, districts, cities, towns, villages, mountains, rivers, fountains, &c. as the surnames, renowns of authority or fame; those of dignities, titles, honourable employments, and other names of distinction, as King, Prince, &c. and altho' capital letters should be used at the beginning of each verse; yet the *Spaniards* are not exact in this point, for they only begin the verses of their heroic and grand Poems with capital letters, being careless in other species of poetry.

## PART II.

### Of ETYMOLOGY.

**G**R E A T is the difference between the mother-ly or dead tongues, and the modern or living ones: because what the first of its firmness or stability will not allow the liberty of inventing or changing a word, case, nor tense, without the risk of committing a barbarism or solecism; the latter, being in the arbitrary power of the living, is nourished, either by adding some words, perfecting those in use, or forgetting those which in it's stuttering age were used. To this was likewise subject the *Latin* tongue, till it was cultivated by *Cicero*, *Plautus*, *Virgil*, &c. it sprang up in time of *Janus* and *Saturnus*, in whose language the priests of *Mars* wrote those verses called by their name *Salii*, which are kept in reverence or respect of the age, which shews the unpolished infancy of that language: it increased in time of *Latius*, from whence was derived the *Latin*, when the twelve law tables were written in *Latin*; and was perfect in the flourishing age of the *Romans*: but as soon as their empire finished, the language fell with it, degenerating in such a manner, that at present is looked on as half corrupted, there being so many barbarisms in its Latinity.

For which like reason, many are the words which the tyrant Use has introduced in the *Spanish* language, whose root has no other trench than the good pleasure of men; and other words are so much degenerated from their original, that almost deny their birth: as *desabuciár*, to desert (is called Physician's verb, and is only used to express when



a man is given over by the Physicians) from the *Latin fiducia*, but has quite opposite sense ; *lavár*, to wash ; from *lodo*, mud, mire, or dirt.

Many have been the authors who treated on Etymologies, but who treated with better order and method was *St Isidore*, a *Spaniard*, whose rules has followed the Royal Academy at *Madrid* in their new dictionary of the *Spanish* language ; to which I refer the curious.

Etymology (as a part of the Grammar) denotes and shews the way to find out the cases of nouns, tenses of verbs, their regularity and irregularity, and the variety of parts in a speech ; some authors define Etymology thus : *The knowledge and discretion of the parts and particles of a speech.* And to proceed to particulars, we think it proper to begin with

## CHAP. I.

*Of the eight parts of speech, and especially of Nouns.*

**I**N *Spanish* as well as in *Latin*, there are eight parts of speech.

Noun,	{	declin'd.	Adverb,	{	undeclin'd.
Pronoun,			Conjunction,		
Verb,			Preposition,		
Participle.			Interjection,		

### *Of a Noun.*

**A** Noun is a part of speech, which signifies a thing without any reference to time, &c. as *máno*, a hand ; *cása*, a house.

Nouns

Nouns are divided into substantives and adjectives.

A noun substantive is that which can stand by it self, without an adjective, as *bómbre*, a man; *cabállo*, a horse, &c. whereas the adjective cannot stand by it self, as being of no value without the addition of the substantive, as *buéno*, good; *brióso* mettlesome, &c. give no perfect notion of themselves, but are explained by being conjoined to the substantives, as *bómbre buéno*, a good man; *cabállo brióso*, a mettlesome horse.

Nouns substantives are divided into proper names and appellatives. The proper names are such as signify certain determinate things, as *Juán*, John; *Róma*, Rome. Appellatives are those that signify things undeterminate, as *iglésia*, a church; *cása*, a house. Some of the nouns are called *primitives*, that is original; others derivatives for their being derived of others, as *lección*, *oído*. Nouns are again divided into simple, as *justó*, just; and compound, as *injústo*, unjust.

There are also diminutives and augmentatives, in both which the *Spanish* abounds more than any other language, there being no word but what admits of several diminutives, to represent the thing spoken of, little; and augmentatives, to represent it greater.

Diminutives are formed by adding to the word *illo*, *íco*, *íto*, *éte*, *uélo*, or *éjo*, and sometimes *ote*.

For Example,

*Hómbre*, a man; forms *Hombrecillo*, *Hombrecíco*, *Hombrecíto*.

*Muchácho*, a boy; *Muchachillo*, *Muchachíco*, *Muchachíto*, *Muchachuélo*.

Where observe the difference between these several sorts, which is that those ending in *illo* and *uélo*, as



*Hombrecillo*, *Muchachuelo*, and the like, denote something of contempt, as, a pitiful little man or boy ; whereas those ending in *ico*, or *ito*, only denote smallness, and sometimes kindness, as when we say *Juanico* or *Juanito*, which is *Johnny* or *Jacky*.

Diminutives in *ete* and *ino* likewise denote nothing but smallness, as *mózo*, a youth ; *mozéte*, a young lad ; *palóma*, a dove ; *palomino*, a young pigeon ; whereas those in *ejo* imply at the same time something of contempt or dislike, as *cuchillo*, a knife ; *cuchilléjo*, a pitiful little knife ; *bidálgo*, a gentleman ; *bidalgóte*, an inconsiderable gentleman.

The same is also used in adjectives, as *grande*, large or great ; *grandezillo*, *grandezico*, *grandezuélo*, *grandéte*, all which signify *largish*, as we may express it, or *somewhat large*.

There are moreover diminutives formed upon diminutives ; as *chíco*, small ; *chiquito*, smaller than the other, and *chiquitico*, very small.

There are on the other hand augmentatives, as has been said, which enlarge, or represent a thing bigger, without any degree of comparison ; and these are formed by adding *ázo*, *on*, or *óte*, to the word, as *bómbre*, a man ; *bombrázo*, *bombrón* or *bombróte*, a great lusty man ; *pérro*, a dog ; *per- rázo*, *perrón*, or *perrote*, a great large dog.

*The nouns numeral, or of number, called cardinals, are as follows :*

Uno, *one*.

Dos, *two*.

Tres, *three*.

Quátro, *four*.

Cínco, *five*.

Séis, *six*.

Siéte, *seven*.

Ocho, *eight*.

Nuéve, *nine*.

Diéz, *ten*.

Once, *eleven*.

Dóce, *twelve*.

Tréce, *thirteen*.

Catórce, *fourteen*.

Quínce, *fifteen*.

Diez y séis, *sixteen*.

Diec

Diez y siete, <i>seventeen.</i>	Quatrocientos, <i>four hundred.</i>
Diez y ocho, <i>eighteen.</i>	Quiniéntos, <i>five hundred.</i>
Diez y nueve, <i>nineteen.</i>	Seiscientos, <i>six hundred.</i>
Veinte, <i>twenty.</i>	Setecientos, <i>seven hundred.</i>
Veinte y uno, <i>twenty one.</i>	Ochocientos, <i>eight hundred.</i>
Veinte y dos, <i>twenty two.</i>	Núvecientos } <i>nine hundred.</i>
&c.	or
Tréinta, <i>thirty.</i>	Novécientos, }
Quarénta, <i>forty.</i>	Mil, <i>a thousand.</i>
Cincuénta, <i>fifty.</i>	Mil y Quiniéntos, <i>a thousand five hundred.</i>
Sesénta, <i>sixty.</i>	Dos mil, <i>two thousand.</i>
Seténta, <i>seventy.</i>	Tres mil, <i>three thousand,</i>
Ochénta, <i>eighty.</i>	&c.
Novénta, <i>ninety.</i>	Cien mil, <i>an hundred thousand.</i>
Ciento, <i>a hundred.</i>	Millón, <i>a million.</i>
Ciento y uno, <i>a hundred and one, &amp;c.</i>	
Dociéntos, or Ducientos <i>two hundred.</i>	
Trecientos, <i>three hundred.</i>	

*N. B.* That all these cardinals are undeclined, and of the common gender, except *uno, una, uno*, in plural *unos, unas*, and *ciento, dociéntos, dociéntas*. *Uno* masculine (in the singular only) when it comes before a noun loses *o*, as *un libro*, a book ; *un soldado*, a soldier. *Ciento* likewise loses *o* when before a noun, either masculine, or feminine, as *cient soldados*, hundred soldiers ; *cient mugeres*, hundred women : but when another number follows it with a conjunction between, then it retains *o*, as *ciento y uno*, *ciento y dos*, &c. When *ciento* has *un* before, then it is made substantive, and governs a genitive, as *un ciento de cabállos*, or *un centenár de cabállos*, an hundred of horse.

All the numbers from *ciento* to *mil*, are masculine, and may be made feminine, changing *os* in *as*, as *duciéntos, ducientás*, *mil* is undeclined, and of the common gender, but *millón*, a million,



# 42 *The RUDIMENTS of*

is masculine and declined, as, *un millón, dos millones.*

*The ordinals which declare the order of time, or place, are*

Primero, *first.*

Segundo, *second.*

Tercero, *third.*

Quarto, *fourth.*

Quinto, *fifth.*

Sexto, *sixth.*

Séptimo, *seventh.*

Octavo, *eighth.*

Nono, or Noveno, *ninth.*

Décimo, or Deceno, *tenth.*

Undécimo, or Onceno, *eleventh.*

Duodécimo, or Doceno, *twelfth.*

Décimotercio, or Tre-  
ceno, *thirteenth.*

Décimoquarto, or Cator-  
ceno, *fourteenth.*

Décimoquinto, or Quin-  
ceno, *fifteenth.*

Décimo sexto, *sixteenth.*

Décimo séptimo, *seven-  
teenth.*

Décimo octavo, *eigh-  
teenth.*

Décimo nono, *nineteenth.*

Vigésimo, or Veinteno, *twentieth.*

Trigésimo, or Treinteno, *thirtieth.*

Quadrágésimo, or Qua-  
renteno, *fortieth.*

Quinquágésimo, or Cin-  
cuenteno, *fiftieth.*

Sexágésimo, or Sesenté-  
no, *sixtieth.*

Septuágésimo, or Seten-  
tén, *seventieth.*

Octuágésimo, or Ochenta-  
tén, *eightieth.*

Nonágésimo, or Noventa-  
tén, *ninetieth.*

Centésimo, Cientén, or  
Centén, *hundredth.*

Docientésimo, or Doci-  
entén, *two hundredth.*

Trecentésimo, or Tre-  
centén, *three hun-  
dredth.*

Quatrocentésimo, or  
Quatrocientén, *four  
hundredth.*

Quingentésimo, or Qui-  
nientén, *five hun-  
dredth, &c.*

Milésimo, *thousandth.*

*Note, that the Spaniards make use of the ordinals and cardinals promiscuously, as en el año de mil seiscientos y ocho, for en el año milésimo seiscientos y ocho: el año quince, for décimo quinto; ciento y sesenta.*

*setenta y siete*, for *centésimo septuagésimo séptimo*, this must be understood only in the computation of years, chapters, &c. the ordinals are masculine, and by changing *o* in *a* are feminine, as *primero*, *primera*.

The nouns numeral called distributives, or of order,  
are

De uno en uno, *one by one*.

De dos en dos, *by two and two*.

De tres entres, *by three and three*.

De quatro en quatro, *by four and four*.

De cinco en cinco, *by five and five, &c.*

as *los Fráiles van de dos en dos fuera del convento*, the Fryars when they go out of the convent they go by two and two.

Note, that when the letter *a* is put between the two cardinals as *uno à uno*, then *à* stand instead of *contra*, against; as *dos à dos*, two to or against two: the same is in these, *tántos à tántos*, so many against so many, as *riñámos quatro à quatro*, or *tántos à tántos*, let us fight four to four, or so many against so many, that is even or equal in number.

## OF ADJECTIVES.

THE termination of Spanish adjectives is for the most part in *e*, or *o*, as *grande*, large; *dulce*, sweet; *breve*, short; *bueno*, good; *santo*, holy, &c.

But there are other adjectives also, whose termination is in *l*, as *útil*, useful; *débil*, weak; *frágil*, frail; *fértil*, fruitful; and others in *z*, as *capáz*, capable; *rapáz*, ravenous.

Those that terminate in *e*, never vary in any gender; so in the adjectives, *grande*, great; *dulce*, sweet; *terrible*, terrible, we say in the masculine gender,



## 44      *The RUDIMENTS of*

gender, *hómbre gránde*, a great man ; in the feminine, *múger gránde*, a great woman ; and in the neuter, *lo gránde*, that which is great.

Those that terminate in *o*, in the feminine gender, change their termination into *a*, as in *buéno*, good, the masculine is, *bómbre buéno*, a good man ; the feminine, *mugér buéna*, a good woman ; but the neuter is again in *o*, as *lo buéno*, that which is good.

Such as terminate in *l*, or *z*, never change in any gender.

The adjectives *gránde*, great ; and *buéno*, good ; are often placed before the substantives, and then sometimes they loose the last syllable, as is usual to say, *gran hómbre*, a great man ; *buén cabállo*, a good horse ; but the feminine gender, *buéna*, is not liable to that abbreviation, because the cutting off the *a*, would make it masculine, and therefore it must always be said, *buéna mugér*, a good woman ; *buéna cása*, a good house.

*Sáento*, when it signifies a saint, has always the last syllable cut off before the proper name, and we say, *San Pédro*, St Peter ; *San Andrés*, St Andrew, &c. except only out of this general rule, *Sáento Domíno*, *Sáento Thomás*, *Sáento Toribío*, and any saints names that begin with *Do*, or *To*, because the cutting off the last syllable of *Sáento*, before them would sink the sound of the name. In speaking of a female saint, no letter is cut off, but it is pronounced at length, as *Sáenta Apolónia*, *Sáenta Margaríla*, &c.

### *The degrees of comparison.*

**A**LL Adjectives have their three degrees of comparison ; the positive, which plainly and simply denotes the thing, as *dócto*, learned ; *discreto*, discreet, &c.

The comparative either enhances or debases the thing, making a comparison, as *mas dócto*, more learned ;

learned ; *ménos dōcto*, less learned ; *mas sánto*, more holy ; *ménos sánto*, less holy.

The superlative raises the thing to the highest pitch, or debases it to the lowest, as *cabállo velocíssimo*, a most fleet horse ; *cára bellíssima*, a most beautiful face.

In *Spanish* there is no comparative degree formed from the positive, as in the *Latin*, but that defect is supplied, by adding the article *mas*, more, or *ménos*, less, to the positive ; as *cláro*, clear ; *mas cláro*, clearer, or more clear ; *obscúro*, dark ; *ménos obscúro*, less dark.

The superlative degree is formed when the positive ends in a vowel, by changing that last vowel into *issimo*, as from *cláro*, clear ; make the superlative *claríssimo*, most clear ; or by the adverb *múi*, very ; or by *múcho mas*, saying *mui*, or *mucho mas cláro* : but if the positive ends in a consonant, add *issimo*, as from *víl*, base ; *vilíssimo*, most base ; from *capáz*, capable, *capacíssimo*, most capable.

The six following words are an exception from the rules above, in relation to the comparative degree, for their superlatives follow the common rule, where note that in these the comparative quite varies from the positive, as follows.

*Buén*o, good ; *méjor*, better ; *boníssimo*, or *óptimo*, best of all.

*Málo*, bad ; *peór*, worse ; *péssimo*, or *malíssimo*, worst of all.

*Gránde*, great ; *mayór*, greater ; *grandíssimo*, or *máximo*, greatest of all.

*Pequén*o, little ; *ménor*, less ; *pequeñíssimo*, or *minímo*, least of all.

*Múcho*, much ; *mas*, more ; *muchíssimo*, most of all.

*Póco*, little ; *ménos*, less ; *poquíssimo*, least of all.

These two are without a positive and comparative.

*Acérrimo*,



*Acérrimo*, extraordinary eager, tenacious, &c.

*Ubérrimo*, extraordinary fruitful.

### Of G E N D E R S.

**I**T is no easy matter to determine, whether there are as many genders in *Spanish*, as in the *Latin*, which has five, viz. the masculine, the feminine, the neuter, the common of two, and the common of three. The question arises from the *Spanish*, having no substantives of the neuter gender, whence it follows that no adjectives can have it, as being only an accident of the other, and there cannot be that in the accident which is not in the subject; whence it will follow that there can be only three genders, the masculine, the feminine, and the common of two.

But this notion, though supported by many, must needs be erroneous; for it is plain that when adjectives, pronouns, and participles, are used as substantives, there is a neuter gender, as appears by the three several articles that express them, for *el* is the masculine, *la* the feminine, and *lo* the neuter; for example, *el bómbré*, the man; *la mugér*, the woman; and *lo buéno*, that which is good. This is again demonstrable in the articles, *éste cabállo*, this horse; *ésta Burra*, this she ass; and *ésto*, this thing; which exactly answer to the *Latin*, *hic*, *hæc*, *hoc*: and therefore it is infallible that these three genders must have a being. As to the others, take the following rules.

1. All adjectives, pronouns, and participles, are of the common gender of three, that is, they will admit of three articles, *éste*, *ésta*, *ésto*, by which the three genders are expressed, which is not only to be supposed when they alter their termination, as *buéno*, *buéna*, *buéno*, but also when they always retain the same, as *amánte*, *prudénse*, &c.

2. All

2. All nouns that are under one and the same termination expressing both man and woman, or the male and female of any sort of living creature, are of the common gender of two, as *éste guarda*, this man keeper ; *ésta guarda*, this woman keeper.

3. The epicene under one termination denotes both the male and female of all animals, and yet has only the masculine, or the feminine article, to express both kinds, for which reason the words *mácho*, male ; or *bembra*, female ; are added to make the distinction, as, *ésta codorniz mácho*, this cock quail ; *éste zorzál bembra*, this hen thrush.

4. All names signifying the males of any sort of animals, are of the masculine gender, as *Pédro*, Peter ; *bómbre*, a man ; *cónde*, an earl ; *León*, a lion. And all that signify the female of any sort, are of the feminine gender, as *María*, Mary ; *mugér*, a woman ; *marquésa*, a marchioness.

Those words are of the doubtful gender, which have sometimes the masculine, and sometimes the feminine prefixed by authors. But for as much as this ambiguity at first proceeded from ignorance, it will be proper for those who understand better, notwithstanding the privilege grounded on custom, to give every word its proper gender. Some words of this sort that occur, are *árte*, *canál*, *colór*, *eclipse*, *embléma*, *mar*, *órden*, *márgen*, *orígen*, *tbéma*. These we frequently find used with either of the articles *el*, or *la*, as, *el árte*, or *la árte*, the art ; and yet it ought certainly to be *la*, to denote the feminine, as in the *Latin*, from whence it is derived ; the same may be said of all others which of right should ever follow their original.



*Rules to know the gender of nouns.*

**A**L L nouns ending in *a* are of the feminine gender, as *pláza*, a square, or market ; *rósa*, a rose ; *cása*, a house. The exceptions are *planéta*, a planet ; *cométa*, a comet, or blazing star ; *día*, a day ; *prophéta*, a prophet ; *evangélista*, an evangelist ; *poéta*, a poet ; *Calvinísta*, a Calvinist ; *Jesuíta*, a Jesuit ; also such as are derived from the Greek, as *dógma*, a dogma, or a received opinion, *probléma*, a problem ; which are masculine, but *embléma*, an emblem, is of doubtful gender.

Nouns ending in *e* are generally of the masculine gender, as *diénte*, a tooth ; *mónte*, a mountain. Except, *fé*, faith ; *fuénte*, a fountain ; *lláve*, a key ; *lécbe*, milk ; *ménte*, the mind ; *tórre*, a tower ; *tróxe*, a granary ; *ánade*, a duck ; *alvayálde*, ceruse ; *áve*, a fowl ; *cálle*, a street ; *cárne*, flesh ; *cláve*, a key of an organ ; *córte*, a prince's court ; *corriénte*, a current ; *dóte*, a dowry ; *espécie*, a species ; *frénte*, the forehead ; *génte*, people ; *muérte*, death ; *miéve*, snow ; *nócbe*, night ; *núbe*, a cloud ; *náve*, a ship ; *puénte*, a bridge ; *párte*, a part ; *serpiénte*, a serpent ; all which are feminine ; but *córte*, when it signifies cutting, shaping, or contriving, is masculine.

Again, all nouns ending in *re*, that have a mute letter before it, are feminine, as *costúmbre*, custom ; *sángre*, blood, &c. From which general rule are likewise excepted, *cóbre*, copper ; *cófre*, a trunk ; *enjambre*, a swarm ; *nómbre*, a name ; and the names of months, *Setiémbre*, *Octúbre*, *Noviémbre*, *Deciémbre*, which are masculine.

Nouns ending in *i* are masculine, if derived from the Arabick, as *albelí*, a violet, according to *Nebrissenfis* ; yet some will have it to be a clove gilliflower ; *albolí*, or *alborí*, a granary ; *zaborí*, one that pretends to see into things that are not

transparent, as stone-walls, &c. But such words taken from the *Greek* are feminine, as *éxtasi*, an extasy ; *Sintáxi*, Syntax.

Nouns ending in *o* are masculine, as *cámpo*, a field ; *témplo*, a church ; except *máno*, a hand ; *náo*, a ship ; *pró*, good ; for we say, *buéna pro os hága*, much good may it do you.

Nouns ending in *u* are masculine, as *Espíritu*, the spirit ; *ímpetu*, violence.

Nouns ending in *y* are feminine, as *léy*, law ; *gréy*, a flock. Except *Réy*, a King.

This is all that can be said of nouns ending in vowels ; next follow those that end in consonants.

Nouns ending in *d* are generally of the feminine gender, as *charidád*, charity ; *babilidád*, ability ; except *césped*, a turf ; *buésped*, an host, or guest ; *ardíd*, a stratagem ; *Adalíd*, a leader ; *Ceníd*, the Zenith ; *almúd*, a certain measure ; *ataúd*, a coffin ; *laúd*, a lute, which are masculine.

Nouns ending in *l* are masculine, as *pardál*, a sparrow ; *arancel*, a list or roll. The exceptions are *cál*, lime ; *sál*, salt ; *señál*, a sign, or token ; *cárcel*, a prison ; *biél*, gall ; *miél*, honey ; *piél*, the skin.

Nouns ending in *n* are masculine, as *carbón*, coal ; *Rabadán*, a chief among shepherds ; *almazén*, a storehouse. Except *sién*, the temple of the head ; *fartén*, a frying-pan ; and all words derived from the *Latin* termination in *go*, as *imágen*, an image, from *imago* ; *márgen*, a margin ; from *margo*, &c. Likewise those ending in *ion*, as *región*, a region ; *elección*, election ; and those ending in *azón*, as *razón*, reason ; from which again except, *corazón*, the heart ; *tarazón*, a piece ; which are masculine.

Nouns ending in *r* are masculine, as *amór*, love ; *Alcázar*, a palace ; except *segúr*, an axe, *flór*, a flower ; *labór*, work ; *mugér*, a woman.

Nouns ending in *s* are masculine, as *combés*, the deck of a ship ; *País*, a country, or landskip. Ex-



cept *miés*, harvest ; *Rés*, a head of cattle ; *tós*, a cough ; and proper names of women, as *Ignés*, Agnes.

Nouns ending in *x* are masculine, as *relóx*, a clock ; *carcáx*, a quiver.

Nouns ending in *z*, are for the most part feminine, as *páz*, peace ; *niñéz*, childhood ; *naríz*, the nose ; *bóz*, a sickle ; *lúz*, light. Except *agráz*, verjuice ; *soláz*, comfort ; *antífaz*, a veil, or covering for the face ; *almiréz*, a mortar ; *dobléz*, a fold, or falshood ; *jaéz*, furniture for a horse ; *pez*, a fish ; *axedréz*, a chequer, or draught-board ; *varníz*, varnish ; *tapíz*, a carpet ; *matíz*, a shadowing in painting ; *albornóz*, a moorish coat ; *arróz*, rice ; *altramúz*, a lupine ; all which are masculine.

To these rules may be added, that all nouns signifying the male, must of course be masculine, as *Dúque*, a Duke ; *gállo*, a cock ; *león*, a lion ; and those denoting a female, must be feminine, as *Condesa*, a Countess ; *gallína*, a hen.

It is further to be observed, that whatsoever the termination happens to be, the proper names of rivers are always masculine, as *el Guadiána*, and so of any others, &c.

### *Of the other accidents belonging to a Noun.*

**T**H E accidents usually belonging to a noun, are its declination, cases, numbers, and articles ; but all these particulars must be explained in the following manner.

### *Of Declensions or Declinations.*

**N**O U N S in *Spanish* are not declined by altering or varying the termination, or last syllable, as is done in the *Latin*, but by adding and  
varying

varying the articles, as they are peculiar to each case.

And if the declensions are known by the variation of the nouns ; it being certain that the *Spaniards* only vary in the plural number : it may be said by deduction that there are five distinct declensions in *Spanish*, as in *Latin* : because the plural numbers end in

*As*, as *régla*, *réglas*, a rule.

*Es*, as *pádre*, *pádras*, a father.

*Is*, as *rubí*, *rubís*, and *rubies*, a ruby.

*Os*, as *témplo*, *témplos*, a temple or church.

*Us*, as *tribu*, *tribus*, a tribe.

There are three particles or notes to denote the cases of a Noun, viz. *De* for the genitive and ablative, *a* or *pára* for the dative, and *ò* for the vocative. These particles are called by other authors *Articles*, but without reason, because the *article* is declinable, and the above particles can never be declined.

### *Of the Cases.*

**T**HE *Spaniards* have six cases, like other languages, being

*Nominative*, or that which names the thing, and generally goes before the verb, as *Pédro perdió su cápa*, Peter lost his cloak.

*Genitive*, or that which shows to whom the thing belongs, or from whom it proceeds, as *éste es el perro de Pédro*, this is the dog of Peter ; *María es hija de Josef*, Mary is Joseph's daughter ; so that this case answers to this question, *whose* or *whereof* ?

*Dative*, or that which shows the place or person to whom the thing is given, and answereth to this question, *to whom* or *to what* ? as *dí mi espáda a mi hermano*, I gave my sword to my brother.



*Accusative*, or that which declares the subject of the verb, and answers to this question *whom or what?* and follows generally the verb, as *ésta mañana recibí éste presente*, this morning I received this present.

*Vocative*, is called the case of calling, admiring, or saluting, as *O Pédro ven aquí*, O Peter, pray come here, &c.

*Ablative*, or that which denotes the place or person from whom the thing is taken, and is generally joined to a preposition, as *procédo de la tierra*, I proceed from the earth.

### *Of the Numbers.*

**T**HE Spaniards like the *Latins*, have two numbers, *viz.*

<i>Singular</i> , which speaketh of	}	as	{	<i>cása</i>	a house
one,					
<i>Plural</i> , which speaketh of	}		{	<i>cáfas</i>	houses
many,					

The singular *Spanish*, if end with a vowel is made plural by adding the letter *s* after it, as *bombre*, *bombres*; *témplo*, *templos*; if end with an *i* vowel is made plural by adding *s* or *es*, as *rubí*, *rubís*, or *rubies*, a ruby; *borceguí*, *borceguís*, or *borceguies*, but generally in *es*, except *maravedí*, which makes *maravedís*, or *maravedises*, &c. if the noun end with a consonant in singular, then is made plural by adding *es*, as *dolór*, *dolóres*; *Apóstol*, *Apóstoles*; *páz*, *lúz*; *véz*, *vóz*, change *z* into *c* in plural, as has been observed before, saying *páces*, *lúces*, &c. *x* is not changed into *g* in plural, as some authors wrongfully observe, but is retained, and so from *relóx* say in plural *relóxes*; *carcáx*, *carcáxes*.

## Of the Spanish articles.

**T**H E R E are three articles in the *Spanish* language, as well as in the *Latin*, and are borrowed of the pronoun, *viz.* *el* for the masculines, *la* for the feminines, and *lo* for the neuters. An article (which is an accident to the Noun, and a necessary one to the modern languages) is a *monosyllable*, or a *diſtion* composed of one syllable, it is *declinable*, and serves to distinguish the genders. The *Spaniards* make use of the articles before all the nouns, except the proper names as in the *English* tongue. Note, that the *English* have but one undeclined article, *viz.* *the* for the masculine and feminine, and the particle *it* which often serves for the neuter : so that the *English* make no difference in genders by their article, when they speak of inanimates, except only the word *ſhip*, which is feminine, and then they make use of the relative *ſhe*, *élla*, ſaying *ſhe is a 20 gun ſhip*, *élla es una náve de 20 cañónes*.

*El.*

This article is irregular in the plural, and make *los*, and tho' always placed before nouns masculine, as *el hombre*, the man : it is also used before the feminine nouns beginning with *a* (and this only in singular, because in plural we say *las álmās*, *las águas*) as *el água*, the water ; *el álma*, or *ánima*, the ſoul ; which is permitted *euphoniæ gratia*, for the better ſound, to avoid two *a*'s coming together, or the cutting one off, which is little used in *Spanish* ; because *la água*, would ſound like *l'água*, and therefore for the more diſtinction they ſay *el água*, as in *French* they ſay *mon ame*, tho' *ame* be of the feminine gender, and not *ma ame* or *m'ame*. Yet is not this a general rule, for the moſt received



custom is to preserve *la* for the words of three or four syllables, as *la antigüedad*, antiquity ; *la Académia*, the academy.

*El* is often put before the verb in the infinitive mood, when followed by another verb, as *el comer en tiempo es bueno, como tambien el dormir quando se necessita*, to eat when 'tis convenient does good, as it is also to sleep when it is wanted.

When the particles *de* or *a* are joined to *el*, often happens that the Spaniards make one syllable of both, as instead of *de el* or *a el* they say *del* or *al*, as it is said before in the Orthography.

*Le* in singular, and *les* in plural are often taken as articles by some authors, but without any grounds for so saying ; because they never are used before nouns, but only as relatives after verbs in dative or accusative, according to the case governed by the verb, they are likewise used before the verbs, as *díxele esto*, I told him this ; *les acompañé*, I accompanied them.

### *La*

Is to be placed before nouns feminine, as *la mugér*, the woman ; except those nouns that begin with *a*, as has been said just above : it is likewise used before and after the verb, tho' not as article, but as relative, as *la llamé*, I called her ; *llamadla*, call her ; the plural of *la* is *las*, and often supplies the noun substantive, as *béso las de v. m<sup>a</sup>* that is *las manos*.

### *Lo*,

As has been said, is the article of the neuter gender, and only used before adjectives, made substantives or taken in that sense, as *lo grande*, that which is great ; *lo bueno*, that which is good, this article has no plural number, sometimes *lo* is taken absolutely,

lutely, as *tódo lo que me mandáre v. m<sup>d</sup>. baré con gústo*, I will do with pleasure every thing that you will or shall command me. It is used likewise before and after a verb as relative, as *lo díre*, I will say it ; *bázlo*, do it.

What has been said of the articles as articles, I think is sufficient for the present, and for the rest I refer the reader to the chapter of Pronouns, and to the Syntax.

*The Masculine article is thus declin'd :*

*The Singular Number.*

Nominative, *el*, the  
Genitive, *del*, or *de el*, of the  
Dative, *à el*, or *al*, or *pára el*, to the  
Accusative, *el*, the  
Ablative, *del*, or *de el*, from the

*The Plural Number.*

Nominative, *los*, the  
Genitive, *de los*, of the  
Dative, *à* or *pára los* to the  
Accusative, *los*, the  
Ablative, *de los*, from the.

*The Feminine thus :*

*The Singular Number.*

Nominative, *la*, the  
Genitive, *de la*, of the  
Dative, *à*, or *pára la*, to the  
Accusative, *la*, the  
Ablative, *de la*, from the

*The Plural Number.*

Nominative, *las*, the  
Genitive, *de las*, of the  
Dative, *a las*, to the  
Accusative, *las*, the  
Ablative, *de las*, from the.

*The Neuter article thus :*

*The Singular Number.*

Nominative, *lo*, the  
Genitive, *de lo*, of the  
Dative, *à*, or *pára lo*, to the  
Accusative, *lo*, the  
Ablative, *de lo*, from the

It has no Plural Number.

Nor are these articles capable of any vocative, without we say, O is general to them all, as, O *bómbre*, O man, O *mugér*, O woman.



*Examples of the Nouns in their several Terminations.*Words end in *a*.

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
Hembra, <i>a Female</i>	Hémbra, <i>Females</i>
Frúta, <i>Fruit</i>	Frútas, <i>Fruits</i>

Words ending in *e*.

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
Hómbre, <i>a Man</i>	Hómbres, <i>Men</i>
Liébre, <i>a Hare</i>	Liébres, <i>Hares</i>

Words ending in *i*.

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
Rubí, <i>a Ruby</i>	Rubís, <i>or Rubies, Rubies</i>
Javalí, <i>a Wild Boar</i>	Javalís, <i>or Javalies, Wild Boars</i>

Words ending in *o*.

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
Cabállo, <i>a Horse</i>	Cabállos, <i>Horses</i>
Milágro, <i>a Miracle</i>	Milágnos, <i>Miracles</i>

Words ending in *u*.

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
Espíritu, <i>a Spirit</i>	Espíritus, <i>Spirits</i>
Tríbu, <i>a Tribe</i>	Tríbus, <i>Tribes</i>

Words ending in *y*.

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
Réy, <i>a King</i>	Réyes, <i>Kings</i>
Léy, <i>a Law</i>	Léyes, <i>Laws</i>

Words ending in *d*.

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
Verdád, <i>Truth</i>	Verdádes, <i>Truths</i>
Mercéd, <i>a Favour</i>	Mercédes, <i>Favours</i>

Words ending in *l*.

Animál, <i>an Animal</i>	Animáles, <i>Animals</i>
Gentíl, <i>a Pagan</i>	Gentíles, <i>Gentiles</i>

Words ending in *n*.

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
Pan, <i>Bread</i>	Pánes, <i>Loaves</i>
Celemín, <i>a Peck</i>	Celemínes, <i>Pecks</i>

Words ending in *r*.

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
Pesár, <i>Grief</i>	Pesáres, <i>Sorrows</i>
Dolór, <i>Pain</i>	Dolóres, <i>Pains</i>

Words ending in *s*.

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur</i>
Diós, <i>God</i>	Dióses, <i>Gods</i>
Mes, <i>a Month</i>	Mésés, <i>Months</i>

Words ending in *x*.

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
Carcáx, <i>a Quiver</i>	Carcáxes, <i>Quivers</i>
Relóx, <i>a Clock</i>	Relóxes, <i>Clocks</i>

Words ending in *z*.

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
Paz, <i>Peace</i>	Páces, <i>Peaces</i>
Juéz, <i>a Judge</i>	Juéces, <i>Judges</i>



*Examples of declining the three several Gender.*

**Example of the Masculine Gender.**

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
<i>Nom.</i> El Pádre, <i>the Father</i>	<i>Nom.</i> Los Pádras, <i>the Fathers</i>
<i>Gen.</i> Del Pádre, <i>of the Father</i>	<i>Gen.</i> Delos Pádras, <i>of the Fathers</i>
<i>Dat.</i> Al Pádre, or pára el Pádre, <i>to the Father</i>	<i>Dat.</i> A los Pádras, or pára los Pádras, <i>to the Fathers</i>
<i>Accus.</i> Al or El Pádre, <i>the Father</i>	<i>Acc.</i> Los Pádras, <i>the Fathers</i>
<i>Voc.</i> O Pádre, <i>O Father</i>	<i>Voc.</i> O Pádras, <i>O Fathers</i>
<i>Abl.</i> Del Pádre, <i>from the Father</i>	<i>Abl.</i> De los Pádras, <i>from the</i> <i>(Fathers</i>

**Example of the Feminine Gender.**

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
<i>Nom.</i> La Mádre, <i>the Mother</i>	<i>Nom.</i> Las Mádras, <i>the Mothers</i>
<i>Gen.</i> De la Mádre, <i>of the Mother</i> <i>(ther</i>	<i>Gen.</i> De las Mádras, <i>of the Mothers</i> <i>thers</i>
<i>Dat.</i> A la Mádre, <i>to the Mother</i> <i>(ther</i>	<i>Dat.</i> A las Mádras, <i>to the Mothers</i> <i>thers</i>
<i>Acc.</i> La Mádre, <i>the Mother</i>	<i>Acc.</i> Las Mádras, <i>the Mothers</i>
<i>Voc.</i> O Mádre, <i>O Mother</i>	<i>Voc.</i> O Mádras, <i>O Mothers</i>
<i>Abl.</i> De la Mádre, <i>from the Mother</i> <i>(ther</i>	<i>Abl.</i> De las Mádras, <i>from the</i> <i>( Mothers</i>

**Example of the Neuter Gender.**

<i>Sing.</i>
<i>Nom.</i> Lo buéno, <i>that which is good</i>
<i>Gen.</i> De lo buéno, <i>of that which is good</i>
<i>Dat.</i> A lo buéno, <i>to that which is good</i>
<i>Acc.</i> Lo buéno, <i>that which is good</i>
<i>Voc.</i> O bueno, <i>O that which is good</i>
<i>Abl.</i> De lo buéno, <i>from that which is good.</i>

These Adjectives used as Substantives have, as has been said before, no Plural Number.

Common Adjectives are declined as Substantives, according to their Genders, and therefore there needs no Examples of them.

*Some*

*Some observations concerning derived and compound Nouns.*

THE Nouns of dignity given to Men, are some of them Substantives, and others Adjectives; the nature of Substantives requires, that they be not given to women, who are possessed of the like dignity, without deriving the Feminine from the Masculine; and thus from *Dúque*, a Duke is deriv'd *Duquesa*, a Duchess; from *Cónde*, an Earl, *Condésa*, a Countess; from *Príncipe*, a Prince, *Príncesa*, a Princess; because *Príncipe* in Spanish is of the Masculine Gender. But when the Name of Dignity is a Noun Adjective, as *Teniente*, a Lieutenant, or a Deputy; *Asistente*, an Assistant; *Presidente*, a President, it serves both Sexes without any Variation; for in speaking of a President's Lady, she is not to be called *la Presidenta*, but *la Presidente*; and so in the rest of that sort.

They are guilty of the like Error who speaking of a wild, or mountain She-Goat, call her *Cábra monteza*, because the Adjective *Montés* shews both Genders, and therefore the Female is to be called *Montés*, as well as the Male. However the Adjectives that denote Kingdoms, or Nations, ending in *es*, are only applied to the Masculine Gender, and the Feminine has the addition of *a*, as in speaking of a *Frenchman*, or an *Englishman*, he is called *Francés*, or *Inglés*, but a Woman of those Nations is *Francésa*, or *Inglésa*.

## CHAP. II.

### *Of Pronouns.*

PRONOUNS are certain words put into the place, or substituted instead of Nouns, serving



## 60 *The RUDIMENTS of*

to shew, or express the person, or thing before named, without naming it over again.

There are several sorts of Pronouns, some of them are called Primitives, as *yó*, I, *tu*, you, *si*, himself, *nos*, or *nosótro*s, we ; *vos*, or *vosótro*s, ye.

Others are Derivatives, or Possessives, because derived from those above, and denoting possession, as *mío*, mine, *túyo*, thine, *súyo*, his, *nuéstro*, ours, *vuéstro*, yours ; with their feminine gender, *mía*, *túya*, *súya*, *nuéstra*, *vuéstra*. It is to be observ'd, that these pronouns, of the singular number when placed before substantives, always lose their last syllable, and for *mío*, *túyo*, *súyo*, must be said, *mi*, *tu*, *su*, as *mi Pádre*, my Father ; *tu Mádre*, your Mother ; *su Avuélo*, his Grandfather. But when a question is asked, then the answer must be *mío*, *túyo*, or *súyo*, as *cúyo es éste guante* ? whose glove is that ? The answer is *mío*, mine, or *túyo*, yours, or *súyo*, his. When they are absolute, or taken as neuter, then they have the article *lo* before, as *lo mío*, that which is mine ; *lo túyo*, that which is thine, &c. The same is practised in the feminine gender.

To form the plural number of these pronouns *mío*, *túyo*, *súyo*, or *mi*, *tu*, *su*, add the Letter *s*, as was before said in the nouns, and you have *míos*, *túyos*, *súyos*, *mis*, *tus*, and *sus*.

There are also demonstrative pronouns, as *éste*, *ésta*, *ésto*, This ; *ése*, *éssa*, *éso*, that ; and *el*, *ella*, *ello*, he, she, that, *éste*, *ésta*, *ése*, *éssa*, and *el* are always placed before nouns, as *éste libro*, this book, *éssa carne*, that flesh ; but *ésto*, *éso* and *ello*, are spoken absolutely, without being joined to any noun ; *ésto*, signifying this thing ; *éso*, that thing ; and *ello*, the thing.

The particles making the cases in declining, when they come before these pronouns beginning with *e*, are not always contracted, and it may be said *de este*, or *deste*, *de esto*, or *desto*.

The

The relative pronouns are, *qual*, which, *quién*, who, *qué*, what.

For declining of pronouns, see the following examples.

The pronoun of the first person *Yo* is thus declin'd.

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
<i>Nom.</i> Yo, <i>I</i>	<i>Nom.</i> Nos, or Nosótro, <i>We</i>
<i>Gen.</i> De mi, <i>Of me</i>	<i>Gen.</i> De nos, or de nosótro, <i>Of us</i>
<i>Dat.</i> A mi, <i>To me</i>	<i>Dat.</i> A nos, or a nosótro, <i>To us</i>
<i>Acc.</i> Me, or a mi, <i>Me</i>	<i>Acc.</i> Nos, or nosótro, <i>Us</i>
<i>Abl.</i> De mi, <i>From me</i>	<i>Abl.</i> De nos, or de nosótro, <i>From us.</i>

The second person *Tu* is thus declined:

<i>Nom.</i> Tu, <i>You</i>	<i>Nom.</i> Vos, or vosótro, <i>Ye</i>
<i>Gen.</i> De ti, <i>Of you</i>	<i>Gen.</i> De vos, or vosótro, <i>Of ye</i>
<i>Dat.</i> A ti, <i>To you</i>	<i>Dat.</i> A vos, or vosótro, <i>To ye</i>
<i>Acc.</i> Te, or a ti, <i>You</i>	<i>Acc.</i> Vos, or vosótro, <i>Ye</i>
<i>Abl.</i> De ti, <i>From you</i>	<i>Abl.</i> De vos, or vosótro, <i>From ye</i>

The third person *Si* thus:

<i>Sing.</i>
<i>Gen.</i> De si, <i>Of himself,</i>
<i>Dat.</i> A si, <i>To himself,</i>
<i>Accus.</i> Se, or a si, <i>Himself,</i>
<i>Ablat.</i> De si, <i>From himself.</i>

And has no plural number, nor feminine gender, unless *mismo* be added to it for the masculine, and then *misma* must be for the feminine, and then it has *misimos* and *misimas* in the plural.

These pronouns in the singular number serve both the masculine and the feminine genders, as does *nos* and *vos* in the plural; but *nosótro* and *vosótro* are masculine, and the feminine is made by turning the last *o* into *a*, that is, instead of *nosótro* say *nosótras*, and instead of *vosótro* *vosótras*.

The



The *Spaniards* frequently in speech and writing use this pronoun *nos* with the first person plural of the imperative mood, taking away the *s* from the verb, as *vámonos*, for *vámos nos*, let us go ; *dexémonos*, for *dexémos nos*, let us leave ; and so they do of *vos*, losing the *v*, as *ídeos*, let ye go, instead of *ídvos*, or losing *d* in the second person plural, as *amáos*, let ye love, instead of *amádos*, or *amádvos*.

It is proper to observe, that the genitive case of these pronouns, seems to be in a manner superfluous, as never in use ; for if we are to speak by way of possession, we must not say *el libro es de mí*, which would be in *English*, the book is of me, but instead thereof, we must use the word, *mío*, viz. *el libro es mío*, the book is mine. So *el cavállo es de ti*, is not *Spanish*, and would signify, the horse is of you ; but it must be *el cavállo es tuyo*, the horse is your's ; and lastly, *el sayo es de sí*, is as false, being the Coat is of him, but it must be, *el sayo es suyo*, or *de v. m<sup>d</sup>* the coat is his. And if the question be asked, *cuya obra es ésta* ? whose work is this ? the answer must be, *mía*, mine, or *tuya*, yours, or *suya*, his.

These pronouns serve after a verb, which is then rather in the ablative, than the genitive case, as *que se dirá de mí* ? what will be said of me ? *que será de ti* ? what will become of you ? *el bábala de sí*, he talks of himself.

The possessives *mío*, *tuyo*, *suyo*, mine, thine, his, and *mi*, *tu*, *su*, my, your, his, as also, *nuéstro*, and *vuestro*, need not be declined here, all of them following the same rule, without any variation.

The three pronouns, *yo*, *tu*, *el*, are used in composition with the word *mismo*, signifying itself, as *yo mismo*, I myself, *tu mismo*, you yourself, *el mismo*, he himself ; where it is to be noted that *el mismo*, also signifies the same, but then *el* is the article *the*. These three are declined as before, only that the *mismo* has a singular and a plural number, and

therefore we must say, *yo mismo*, *tu mismo*, and *el mismo*, in the singular, and *nosotros mismos*, *vosotros mismos*, and *ellos mismos*, in the plural; and so *mismo* and *mismos* for the masculine gender, and *misma* and *mismas* for the feminine.

The pronouns possessive are *Mío*, *Tuyo*, *Suyo*, *Nuestro*, *Vuestro*, and the feminine gender of them *Mía*, *Tuya*, *Suya*, *Nuestra*, *Vuestra*; but if placed before the substantive, then it must be *Mi*, *Tu*, *Su*, and in the plural *Mis*, *Tus*, *Sus*. It is proper also here to speak of the pronoun of interrogation, *Cuyo*, in the masculine, and *Cuya*, in the feminine gender, and *Cuyos* and *Cuyas*, in the plural number, which always denotes the genitive. To explain the proper use of these words, take these examples: Asking the question, *Cuyo es este caballo?* that is *de quien es este caballo?* Whose Horse is this? The answer is, *Mío*, mine, *Tuyo*, yours, *Suyo*, his; and so in the feminine gender, only changing the *o* into *a*, as *cuya*, *mía*, &c. and in the plural number adding *s*, as *cuyos* or *cuyas*, &c.

Note, That *Cuyo* is likewise relative, as *el Rey, en cuya Mano está el hacer bien*, &c. the King in whose Hand or Power is, to do good, &c. *este réo, cuyos delitos son grandes*, &c. This guilty person whose crimes are great, &c.

### The Demonstratives *Este*, *Éste*, *Aqué*, *El*.

**E**STE, This, as *este Hombre*, this Man, *este Caballo*, that Horse; *aqué* is also *that*, but yet with this difference, that *este* signifies *that* which is near to the person who is spoken to, whereas *aqué* denotes *that* which is neither near him who is spoken to, nor him who speaketh.

These



These pronouns are thus declined :

Sing.	Masc.	Fem.	Neut.	
<i>Nom.</i>	<i>éste</i>	<i>ésta</i>	<i>ésto</i>	<i>This</i>
<i>Gen.</i>	<i>déste, or de éste</i>	<i>désta, or de ésta</i>	<i>désto, or de ésto</i>	<i>Of this</i>
<i>Dat.</i>	<i>a éste</i>	<i>a ésta</i>	<i>a ésto</i>	<i>To this</i>
<i>Acc.</i>	<i>éste, or a éste</i>	<i>esta, or a ésta</i>	<i>esto, or a ésto</i>	<i>This</i>
<i>Abl.</i>	<i>déste, or de éste</i>	<i>désta, or de ésta</i>	<i>désto, or de ésto.</i>	<i>From this</i>

Plur.	Masc.	Fem.	No Neut.	
<i>Nom.</i>	<i>éstos</i>	<i>ésta</i>		<i>These</i>
<i>Gen.</i>	<i>déstos, or de éstos</i>	<i>déstas, or de éstas</i>		<i>Of these</i>
<i>Dat.</i>	<i>a éstos</i>	<i>a éstas</i>		<i>To these</i>
<i>Acc.</i>	<i>éstos, or a éstos</i>	<i>éstas, or a éstas</i>		<i>These</i>
<i>Abl.</i>	<i>déstos, or de éstos</i>	<i>déstas, or de éstas.</i>		<i>From these</i>

*Esse, éssa, ésto*, is declined in the same manner, the plural number being *éssos, éssas*. The like of *Aquél, Aquélla, Aquéllos, Aquéllas*.

So is *el*, he, *élla*, she, *éllo*, the or that thing, *éllos*, they, masculine, *ellas*, they, feminine. There is no neuter plural. The cases need not to be repeated, being the same as those before. The word *ótro*, is often joined to *ése*, or *éssa*, as *Essótro*, or *Esseótro*, the other Man or Thing; *Essótra*, or *Esseaótra*, the other Woman.

There are two other pronouns, which have only a plural number, as signifying two, which are *ámbos*, and *entrámbos*, both. To the first of them is often added *a dos*, that is, *!Ambos a dos*, both together, and *Entrámbos*, imports much the same. Note, that of *éste*, and *ése*, is made *aquéste, aquése*, this or that very Man. And so in the feminine and neuter gender.

The

The relatives, *Quién*, *Que*, *Qual*.

**Q**UIEN, is either interrogative, or relative, as *Quién lo dice?* Who says it? *No báí quién lo súfra*, no Man can endure it.

*Qué*, is also interrogative, and relative, as *Que es ésto?* What is that? *El bómbré que yo dígo*, The Man I speak of.

*Qual*, signifies Which, as *Qual déllos?* which of them? To this is sometimes added *el*, for the masculine, *la* for the feminine, and *lo* for the neuter, as *el qual*, *la qual*, *lo qual*.

The declining of these consisting only in the addition of the articles, it is needless to run the same over again; only it must be observed, that *Que* has no plural number, as signifying What, which is incapable of it; and yet *Quién* and *Qual*, though they signify *Who*, and *Which*, have a plural, which is *Quiénes*, and *Quáles*, as *Quiénes son aquéllos?* Who are those? and *Quáles son los que dices?* What sort of people are those you speak of, or what are they?

*El*, is frequently joined to *Qual*, which we cannot so properly express in *English*, as signifying *Who*; but *lo qual*, is expressed, the which, these two conjoined are declined as follows?

Sing.	Masc.	Fem.	Neut.
Nom.	El qual	la qual	lo qual
Gen.	del qual	de la qual	de lo qual
Dat.	al qual	a la qual	a lo qual
Acc.	el qual, or al (qual	la qual, or a la (qual	lo qual, or a lo (qual
Abl.	del qual	de la qual	de lo qual



Plur.	Masc.	Fem.	No Neuter.
<i>Nom.</i>	los quáles	las quáles	
<i>Gen.</i>	de los quáles	de las quáles,	
<i>Dat.</i>	a los quáles	a las quáles	
<i>Acc.</i>	los quáles, <i>or</i> (a los quáles	las quáles, <i>or</i> a las (quáles	
<i>Abl.</i>	de los quáles	de las quáles	

When the word *Quiéra*, is added to *Quién*, or *Qual*, it quite alters the meaning, so *Quienquiéra* signifies any person, or man whatsoever ; and *Qualquiéra*, is any one, whether man, or woman, or other thing. When *que* is added to *tal* thus, *que tal*, then stands for *quál* in Spanish.

*Of the Reciprocals, or Relatives, me, te, se.*

THESE three are only of the dative and accusative Cases, and have always a verb either before, or after them, as *Díme quién eres?* Tell me who you are? *Dóite el Parabién?* I give you Joy. *Fuése de aquí*, He went away from hence. They are also placed before verbs, as, *Pédro me dixo*, Peter told me. *Juán te dará*, John will give you. *El se alába*. He praises himself. Many other examples might be brought wherein these pronouns are variously used ; but those things are better learnt by practice, than set down as rules.

*Mi, ti, si*, before spoken of as genitive Cases, the first two of *yo*, and *tu*, and the third without a proper nominative, are often join'd to the word *con*, with, and the syllable *go*, added to it, thus *Conmigo*, with me ; *Contigo*, with you ; *Configo*, with himself. They have no variation for the genders, but serve both the masculine, and the feminine.

*Note*, That *proprio* stands often for *mismo*, as *yo próprio*, or *yo mismo*, *tu próprio*, &c.

The possessive *su*, and in plural *sus*, stands for his, her's, their, &c. as *el Réy con su Hijo el Príncipe*, the King with his Son the Prince; *la Réyna con su hija la Princesa*, the Queen with her Daughter the Princess.

*Los subditos deben obedecer, y pagar tributo à su Réy*, the Subjects ought to obey, and pay tribute to their King.

*El General comió con sus oficiáles subalternos*, the General dined with his subaltern Officers.

*Su* stands also for *el*, or *la*, as *el bómbré tiéne su-  
sér (el sér) de Dios*, Man has the being from God. *Su firma del capitán*, *su* for *la*; but to speak properly, read always *el sér*, the being; *la fírma*, the sign, or one's name.

### Add to these

The imperfect Pronouns, or properly these Nouns relatives: *Cierto*, certain; *úno*, one; *algúno*, *álguien*, somebody, or *álgo* in neuter, something; *cadaúno*, each, every body; *nádie*, no body (these two last mentioned have no plural) *ótro*, other; *sólo*, alone; *tódo*, all; *tal*, such; *tanto*, so much; *quanto*, how much. And the two *punique* words *fuláno* and *zutáno*, such a one. *Note*, That these are called by *Salv. Náves*, pronouns indefinites.

There are three persons in the Pronouns, *viz.*

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
1. Yo, <i>I</i>	<i>nos, or nosotros, we</i>
2. Tu, <i>Thou</i>	<i>vos, or vosotros, ye</i>
3. El, or aquél, <i>he</i>	<i>éllos, or aquellos; they</i>



## C H A P. III.

*Of V E R B S.*

**A** Verb is a part of speech, that signifies to be, to do, or to suffer, as *ser bómbré*, to be a Man; *ámo*, I love; *soí amádo*, I am loved: Is conjugated through Moods and Tenses; by Moods the Verb is changed according to the circumstances, as *yo háblo*, I speak, is the indicative; *bábla tu*, speak thou, the imperative, &c. Tenses are the distinction and variety of times, as *venía*, I was coming; *víne*, I came, &c.

Verbs are divided into personals, (so called because they have persons) as *yo ámo*, I love; *tu ámas*, thou lovest, &c. and impersonals, (because without persons) as *conviene*, it behoveth, *consta* it is plain.

The personals are subdivided into

Active		Neuter
Passive		Reciprocal.

Active signifies to do, as *enseñar*, to teach; *leér*, to read; and may be made passive by the auxiliary Verb *ser*, and the participle passive of the Verb, as *ser enseñádo*, *soí enseñádo*, &c.

Passive signifies to suffer, as *soí amádo*. But note, That in the third person singular, and the third of the plural are conjugated not only with the the auxiliar *ser*, but even with the particle *se*, as *Diós es amádo*, or *Diós se áma*, God is beloved. *Buénó es que la virtúd sea ballada*, or *se bálle en un Príncipe*, it is good that Virtue be found in a Prince. *Que los Buénos sean amádos*, or *se ámen*, that the virtuous

virtuous may be loved. By which you may see, that the participle Passive is varied in the conjugation of this Verb, saying, *Yo soy amado, nosotros somos amados.*

*Neuter* properly is that which signifies neither action nor passion, as *colorár*, to colour; *coloreár*, to recover a colour, or to give colour; *corrér*, to run, *assentír*, to assent. This Verb makes a perfect sense by itself, in which it differs from the active, as *duérmo*, I sleep, *nieva*, it snows.

The verb *Active* says the same thing in the active and passive voices, as *yo amo à diós*, or *dios es amado de mi*, which can't be said by the Neuter in a proper manner.

The Neuter is either substantive, as *ser*, to be; or absolute (so called for its making a sense by itself) by action, as *blasphemár*, to blaspheme, *lluéve*, it rains; or by passion, as *coloreár*, *ennegrecér*.

The verb reciprocal is that which return the sense backward, and is conjugated thus, *apercibirse*, to be prepared or provided for, *me apercibo*, I prepare myself, *te apercibes*, thou preparest thyself; and always has the particle *se* in the infinitive.

*Note*, That in the *Spanish* language, one Verb may be made *active*, *passive*, *neuter*, and *reciprocal* by the different senses that it may be applied to it, as *acostár*, to put one in it's bed, is active, and is made passive by the Verb *auxiliár estar*, and the participle passive, as *estoy acostado*, I am put in my bed, or I lay down. When it signifies to follow one's party, or opinion, or to declare himself partial for a Prince, is *Neuter*, as *Pédro, dexado el servicio de Fráncia, por proméssas de adelantamiento acostó à la parte de España.* Peter having left the *French* service, by the promises he had on his being promoted, enlisted himself in the *Spanish* service. And when it signifies to come near to a place, as *acostarse aqui*, to come near to this place, then is reciprocal, as *si te acuéstas aqui*,



*aquí, te mataré,* if you come near to this place, I will kill you.

Some of the Verbs are regular, (so called for their being confined to rules) and others irregular (so called, because they have no rule); but as their irregularity is various some time in the present tense of the indicative, in the preterperfect, future, in the imperative, preter imperfect and future of the optative, and otherwise in their participles, I shall take care to mention it in the Conjugations.

### *Of Conjugations.*

**T**H E R E are three Conjugations in the *Spanish* Tongue, *viz.*

- |                 |        |                              |
|-----------------|--------|------------------------------|
| 1. in <i>ár</i> | } as { | <i>Amár</i> , to love        |
| 2. in <i>ér</i> |        | <i>Respondér</i> , to answer |
| 3. in <i>ír</i> |        | <i>Venír</i> , to come.      |

So that the *Spanish* Verbs are to be looked for in the Dictionaries by their infinitives.

### *Of Moods.*

**T**H E Moods are six, as in *Latin*, *viz.* The *Indicative*, or that which shows, or declares; the *Imperative*, or that which commands; *Optative*, or that which wishes, or desires; *Subjunctive*, which supposes something; *Potential*, or that by which something is expected; and the *Infinitive*, which leaves all undetermined.

### *Of Tenses.*

**T**H E Tenses, which are the times of action, or passion, are three properly, being the present, the past, and the time to come: And with those

those made by circumlocution are ten in the indicative Mood, *viz.* the present, preterimperfect, three preterperfects, the plus perfect, and four futures: And in the optative Mood there are nine, *viz.* the present, three preterimperfects, preterperfect, two preter plus perfects, and two futures.

*Of the Indicative Mood.*

**T**HE Present Tense of all Conjugations of regular verbs, is formed by changing *ar*, *er*, or *ir* of the infinitive into *o*, as from *amár* say *ámo*, from *leér*, *léo*, from *cumplir*, *cúmplo*; this tense extends itself to a future time, as *mañana es día de fiesta*, to-morrow is a holy day.

The Preterimperfect of the first Conjugation is formed by changing *ár* into *ába*, as *amába*, I did love, or properly I was loving; and of the second and third Conjugation, is formed by changing *ér* and *ír* into *ía*, as *perdía*, *pedía*.

*Note*, That this Tense has two ways of explaining the second person plural through all Conjugations, as *amábadeis* or *amábais*; *perdiádeis* or *perdiáis*; *pediádéis* or *pedíais*.

The first Preterperfect of the first Conjugation by changing *ár* into *é*, as *amár*, *amé*; but of the second and third Conjugations by changing *ér* and *ír* into *í*, as *perder*, *perdí*, *pedir*, *pedí*. This tense is called *Definite*, because it is a time perfectly past and expressed; as *el mes pasado hablé con él*, I spoke with him last month.

The second Perfect of all the Conjugations is formed of the auxiliar verb *haber*, and the participle passive of the verb treated of, as *he hablado*, I have spoken, *he perdido*, I have lost; *he pedido*, I have asked.

The third Perfect is formed in the same manner, as *hubo hablado*, &c. but not so frequently used in *Spanish* as the other two.



*Note*, That these two latter are called Preterperfects indefinites, for their time is not determined, as *le he hablado*, I have spoken to him, but we don't say when.

So that the difference between the first preterperfect and the others, is that the former should express time, and the latter not; besides, that the first extends itself farther than the others (which are referred to time but lately past) you may say, *le hablé dos años ha*, I spoke to him two years ago; but you can't say *le he hablado dos años há*, I have spoken to him two years ago; because *he hablado* does only extend to a time so lately past, that it appears to have something of the present. These are *Valéra's* Observations, which I advise the Reader to observe, in order to avoid the frequent Equivocations that often happens in speaking and writing.

The Preterplusperfect thus: *había hablado*, *había perdido*, *había pedido*, I had spoken, lost, &c.

The first Future is formed of the infinitive, adding *é* after *r*, as of *hablar*, adding *e* say *hablaré*; *perder*, *perderé*; *pedir*, *pediré*, having always the accent on the last letter.

The second Future with the auxiliary *be*, *tengo*, or *débo*, and the infinitive Mood with *de* before it, as *be* or *tengo de dar*, I am to give, *débo de dar*, or *débo dar*, I am oblig'd, I must give.

The third thus: *Havré de hablar*, I shall be obliged to speak, &c.

The fourth (which properly is the second Preterplusperfect) thus: *Havía de hablar*, I had, or I was to speak, &c.

### *Of the Imperative.*

THE Imperative is made of the third person of the present of the indicative Mood, and of the present of the optative, as *ama tu*, love thou;  
*ama*

*áme aquél*, let him love ; *pierde tu*, loose thou ; *pierda el*, let him loose, &c.

So that the third person of the indicative is the second of the imperative, and the third of the imperative is the first of the optative. The second plural is formed from the infinitive by changing *r* into *d*, of *amár* say *amád*, let ye love ; *perder*, *perdéd* ; *pedir*, *pedíd* ; and often the *d* is lost, saying *amaos* for *amád vos*, or *amád os*, and sometimes is transposed after *l*, as *amálos*, *amáles* for *amádlos*, or *amádles* ; and so it is often said *decilde* for *decidle*.

*Of the Optative, Potential, and Subjunctive Moods.*

**O**PTATIVE, or that wishes, or desires, has always annexed an adverb, as *óxala*, *ò si*, *pluguiesse à Diós*, would to God, I pray God, or God grant ; *aunque*, *no obstante que*, *sin embargo que*, altho', notwithstanding.

Potential properly has no signs in *Spanish*, but in *English* has these, *can*, *may*, *might*, *could*, *should*, or *ought*, which are equal to these *Spanish* expressions, *puede ser que*, *es menester que*, as some authors will have it.

*Subjunctive* has always some conjunction annexed, as *si*, *cómo*, *que*, *quando* : *if*, *as*, *that*, *when*, as *como yo áme*, as *O* may love ; but the tenses are all alike in these three Moods.

The present of the Optative is formed by the present of the Indicative changing *o* into *e* in the first conjugation, and into *a* in the second and third conjugations, as, from *ámo* say *áme* ; *piérdo*, *piérda* ; *pído*, *pída*.

The first and second Preterimperfects are formed from the first person of the first preterperfect of the Indicative, as from *amé* in the first conjugation changing *e* into *ára* or *ásse* is made *amára*, *amásse* ; in the second and third conjugations add to the preterperfect



## 74 The RUDIMENTS of

terperfect *éra* or *éffe*, as from *perdí* say *perdiéra*, *perdiéffe*, from *pedí* say *pidiéra*, *pidiéffe*.

The third Preterimperfect is formed from the infinitive, adding *ía*, as from *amár* say *amaría*, from *leér*, *leeríá*, from *pedír*, *pidiríá*.

Observe here, That these tenses have two ways to explain the second person plural, as *amarádeis* or *amáraís*, *amássedeis*, or *amásseis*, *amariádeis*, or *amaríais*, and so in the other two conjugations.

Observe likewise, That these three tenses vary one from another, speaking in a right method; tho' there is such a confusion in explaining them, that hardly there is any difference made by the Spaniards. Some Authors adapt them to the three Moods, viz. *amára* to the Optative, *amásse*, to the Subjunctive, and *amaría* to the Potential; as *oxala yo amára la virtúd*, God grant that I might love virtue; *como yo amásse a Diós, el me amaria*, as I could love God, he would love me.

Other Authors, as Tominque, Cessér in Gram. Rud. and Villalba, are of opinion, that *amára* denotes the disposition of a thing, or the readiness for an action; *amásse* the beginning of it, and *amaria* the possibility to obtain it; or as Terebio, says the first imperfect is a tense of motion, *exquo* from whence, and related to the medium, as *de los veinte pésos le diéra diez para comprarse un vestido*, of the twenty pieces of eight I would give him ten, that he might buy himself a suit of cloaths; the second a tense medium, or *inquo*, as *como le ballasse baciendo loque le dixe*, as I should find him in doing what I told him. And the third a conditional tense, as *si lo baría, como el fuéra buéno*, I would do it, if he would be good.

One thing is certain amidst all these, that *aunque*, *como*, *oxala*, &c. follow the two first preterimperfects, and the third imperfect tense is used by way of interrogation, or suspension, saying:

*baría*

*baria v. m<sup>d</sup>. esto?* Would you do this? *O que bien lo baria yo!* O that I could do it well! or with *si*.

The Preterperfect is formed from the auxiliar verb *bavér*, and the participle passive thus; *báya amádo*, *baya perdido*, *báya pedído*, when I have loved, &c.

The first Plusperfect thus: *Húviéra amádo*, when I had loved.

The second, *buviéffe amádo*, when I had loved.

1. Future is made of the first Preterimperfect, by changing *ra* into *re*, as *amára*, *amóre*; *perdiéra*, *perdiére*; *pediéra*, *pidiére*, with the same accent on all the syllables.

2. Future of the first Plusperfect by changing *ra* into *re*, and participle passive, as from *búviéra amádo*, say in the future *búviére amádo*. So that there are nine tenses in the Optative Mood, as well as in the Subjunctive and Potential.

### *Of the Infinitive Mood.*

**I**NFINITIVE signifieth to do, to suffer, or to be; and hath neither number, nor person, nor nominative Case before as *amár*, to love; *perdér*, to loose; *pedír*, to ask, to beg.

When two Verbs come together without any nominative Case between them, then the latter shall be in the infinitive Mood, as *deséo aprendér*, I desire to learn: And often times the infinitive supplies the nominative case, as *amár à Diós*, y *bacer bien al Próximo*, *son los dos actos Principáles de un Chrísti-áno*, to love God, and do good to the Neighbour, are the two principal Actions of a Christian.

When *le*, *la*, *lo*, *les*, *las*, *los*, are added to the infinitive, then *r* is often changed into *l*, as *amélle* for *amárle*, *perdélle* for *perderle*, *decélle* for *decírle*, to love him, to loose him, to tell him. And when *me*, *te*, *se*, *nos*, *os*, &c. follow the infinitive immediately, then they are pronounced as monosyllables, as *decírle*, *decírsete*, &c.



76      *The RUDIMENTS of*  
*A general Scheme of the Termination of Verbs of the*  
*three Conjugations in their simple Tenses.*

				<i>Singular.</i>			<i>Plural.</i>			
Persons				<i>yo,</i>	<i>tu,</i>	<i>el</i>	<i>nosotros,</i>	<i>vosotros</i>	<i>ellos,</i>	
				<i>I,</i>	<i>thou,</i>	<i>he</i>	<i>we</i>	<i>ye</i>	<i>they</i>	
<i>Indicative Mood.</i>	<i>pres. te.</i>	1.	}	<i>do</i>	<i>dost</i>	<i>doth</i>	<i>do</i>	<i>do</i>	<i>do.</i>	
				<i>o</i>	<i>as</i>	<i>a</i>	<i>amos</i>	<i>áis</i>	<i>an</i>	
				<i>o</i>	<i>es</i>	<i>e</i>	2. <i>émos</i>	<i>éis</i>	<i>en</i>	
		3.	}	<i>did</i>	<i>didst</i>	<i>did</i>	3. <i>ímos</i>	<i>is</i>	<i>en</i>	
				<i>ába</i>	<i>ábas</i>	<i>ába</i>	<i>did</i>	<i>did</i>	<i>did</i>	
								<i>ábamos</i>	<i>abádeis</i>	<i>ában</i>
	<i>pret. imp.</i>	1.	}	<i>ia</i>	<i>ías</i>	<i>ía</i>	<i>íamos</i>	<i>ábais</i>	<i>ían</i>	
				<i>have</i>	<i>hast</i>	<i>hath</i>	<i>íais</i>	<i>iadeis</i>		
				<i>é</i>	<i>áste</i>	<i>ó</i>	<i>amos</i>	<i>ásteis</i>	<i>áron</i>	
		2.	}	<i>i</i>	<i>íste</i>	<i>ó</i>	<i>ímos</i>	<i>ísteis</i>	<i>éron</i>	
				<i>shall or will have</i>						
		3.	}	<i>ré</i>	<i>rás</i>	<i>rá</i>	<i>remos</i>	<i>réis</i>	<i>rán</i>	
<i>Imper.</i>	1.	}		<i>do thou,</i>	<i>let him do,</i>		<i>let us,</i>	<i>let ye,</i>	<i>let them</i>	
				<i>a tu,</i>	<i>e el</i>		<i>emos nosotros,</i>	<i>ad vosotros</i>	<i>en ellos</i>	
				<i>e</i>	<i>a</i>		<i>amos</i>	<i>éd</i>	<i>an</i>	
				<i>e</i>	<i>a</i>		<i>amos</i>	<i>íd</i>	<i>an</i>	
<i>Potential Mood.</i>	Persons				<i>yo, I</i>	<i>tu, thou,</i>	<i>el he</i>			
					<i>may</i>	<i>mayst</i>	<i>may</i>	<i>nosotros,</i>	<i>vosotros, ye</i>	<i>ellos</i>
					<i>or can</i>			<i>we</i>		<i>they</i>
	<i>pres. te.</i>	1.	}	<i>c</i>	<i>es</i>	<i>c</i>	<i>émos</i>	<i>éis</i>	<i>en</i>	
				<i>a</i>	<i>as</i>	<i>a</i>	<i>amos</i>	<i>áis</i>	<i>an</i>	
				<i>might mightst might</i>						
		<i>imperf. tenses</i>	1.	}	<i>ára</i>	<i>áras</i>	<i>ára</i>	<i>áramos</i>	<i>áradeis-árais</i>	<i>áran</i>
					<i>ásse</i>	<i>ásse</i>	<i>ásse</i>	<i>ássemos</i>	<i>ásseis-ásseis</i>	<i>ásse</i>
					<i>aría</i>	<i>arias</i>	<i>aría</i>	<i>aríamos</i>	<i>ariades-ariais</i>	<i>arian</i>
	2.		}	<i>éra</i>	<i>éras</i>	<i>éra</i>	<i>éramos</i>	<i>érades-érais</i>	<i>éran</i>	
				<i>ése</i>	<i>ése</i>	<i>ése</i>	<i>ésemos</i>	<i>éseis-éseis</i>	<i>ése</i>	
				<i>ría</i>	<i>rias</i>	<i>ría</i>	<i>ríamos</i>	<i>riadeis-riais</i>	<i>rían</i>	
	<i>shall shall shall</i>									
	<i>future</i>	1.	}	<i>áre</i>	<i>áres</i>	<i>áre</i>	<i>áremos</i>	<i>áredeis-áreis</i>	<i>áren</i>	
				<i>ére</i>	<i>éres</i>	<i>ére</i>	<i>éremos</i>	<i>éredeis-éreis</i>	<i>éren</i>	

*Infinitive*

*Infinitive*

*Infinitive Mood.*

Pref. Ten.	1. ár	} to have	Gerun. ándo éndo iéndo	having	Par. p. ádo ído ído	} had.
and	2. ér					
Pret. imp.	3. ír					

*The Termination of Verbs of the three Conjugations in their compound Tenses.*

		<i>Singular.</i>			<i>Plural.</i>				
Persons		<i>yo</i>	<i>tu</i>	<i>el</i>	<i>nos.</i>	<i>vos.</i>	<i>ellas</i>		
		I,	thou,	he	we,	ye,	they,		
Indicative Mood.	2. pre-per.	<i>I have, &amp;c.</i>			<i>hemos or haveis, han</i>				
	{	1.	hé,	hás,	{	ádo	{		
		2.	ha					2	2. ído
		3.						3	3. ido
	3. perf.	<i>I have, &amp;c.</i>			<i>huvimos, huvisteis</i>				
	{	1.	húve,		{	ádo	{		
		2.	húviste,					2	2. ído
		3.	húvo					3	3. ido
	pluper.	<i>I had, &amp;c.</i>			<i>haviámos, { haviádeis,</i>				
	{	1.	havía,		{	ádo	{		
		2.	havía s,					2	2. ído
		3.	havía					3	3. ido
2. futu.	<i>I am to</i>			<i>hemos, haveis, han de</i>					
{	1.	he or tengo		{	ár	{			
	2.	has, há de					ér	ér	
	3.						ír	ír	
3. futu.	<i>I must, or shall be obliged to</i>			<i>havrém os, havréis,</i>					
{	1.	havr é,		{	ár	{			
	2.	havras,					ér	ér	
	3.	havr á de					ír	ír	
4. futu.	<i>I had, or I was to</i>			<i>haviámos, { haviádeis,</i>					
{	1.	havía,		{	ár	{			
	2.	havía s,					ér	ér	
	3.	havía de					ír.	ír	



Persons	yo tu el		nosotros, vosotros, ellos	
	I, thou, he		we, ye, they	
	might or could have, &c.			
Potential Mood.	pre-per. { 1. } háya, { ádo		hayámos, { hayádeis { ádo	
	{ 2. } háyas, { 2 <sup>do</sup>		{ hayáis { 2 <sup>do</sup>	
	{ 3. } háya { 3		háyan { 3	
	I had, &c.			
Potential Mood.	1 plusp. { 1. } huviéra, { ádo		huviéramos, { adeis, { ádo	
	{ 2. } huvieras { 2 <sup>do</sup>		{ ais { 2 <sup>do</sup>	
	{ 3. } huviéra { 3		éran { 3	
	I had, &c.			
Potential Mood.	2 plusp. { 1. } huviésse { ádo		huviéssimos, { edeis, { ádo	
	{ 2. } ésses { 2 <sup>do</sup>		{ eis { 2 <sup>do</sup>	
	{ 3. } ésse { 3		éssen { 3	
	shall or will			
Potential Mood.	2 futur. { 1. } huviére, { ádo		huviéremos, { edeis, { ádo	
	{ 2. } éres, { 2 <sup>do</sup>		{ eis { 2 <sup>do</sup>	
	{ 3. } ére { 3		éren. { 3	

## Infinitive.

Pret. perf.	{ 1. }	haver	{ ádo		havi-	{ ádo	
and	{ 2. }		{ 2 <sup>do</sup>	to have, &c.	endo	{ 2 <sup>do</sup>	
Plusperf.	{ 3. }		{ 3		Gerunds	{ 3	having.
Future	{ 1. }	haver de	{ ár		or ha-	{ ár	
	{ 2. }		{ ért	to have hereafter	vien-	{ ért	
	{ 3. }		{ ír		do	{ ír	
Supine	{ 1. }	à	{ ár		de	{ ír	
	{ 2. }		{ ért	to have			
	{ 3. }		{ ír				

## Observations on the Verbs.

**T**HE regular and irregular Verbs, generally speaking, agree in this, that the first Futures of the Indicative Mood, and that of the Optative are always the same through out all the Conjugations, with this difference, that the first has the accent on the last syllable, and the second in the *ante penultima*.

When

When the first Preterperfect of the indicative is irregular, the first and second Preterimperfects, and the first Future of the Optative are irregular, as

<i>dár</i> , to give ; Pret. Perf.	<i>tenér</i> , to have, or hold, Pret. imperf. opt.	<i>decir</i> , to say. Future.
<i>di</i> , <i>I give</i>	<i>diéra</i> , or <i>diéſſe</i> , <i>I might give.</i>	<i>diére</i> , <i>when I ſhall give.</i>
<i>túve</i> , <i>I had</i>	<i>tu viéra</i> , or <i>tu viéſſe</i> , <i>that I might have.</i>	<i>tu viére</i> , <i>when I ſhall have.</i>
<i>dixe</i> , <i>I ſaid</i>	<i>dixéra</i> , or <i>dixéſſe</i> <i>that I might ſay.</i>	<i>dixére</i> , <i>when I ſhall ſay.</i>

The third Preterimperfect of the Optative is always the ſame, and ends in *ría*, as *daría*, *tendría*, *diría* for *deciría*.

*Note*, Likewise, that generally the third perſon ſingular of the preſent tenſe of the Indicative Mood, is the ſecond perſon of the Imperative, and the third of the Imperative is the firſt of the Optative, as *aquel áma*, he loveth ; *áma tu*, love thou ; *áme aquel*, let him love ; *que yo áme*, that I may love.

There are few exceptions in the Imperative, as from *ponér*, *tenér*, *bacér*, *decir*, &c. ſay *pon tu* inſtead of *pone tu*, *ten tu* for *tiene tu*, *báz* for *bace*, but this is in uſe, *dí tu*, or *dice tu*, &c.

### *Of the Participle.*

**A** Participle is a part of a ſpeech, it comes from the verb, and participates its force, that is, has the ſame ſignification, and governs the cauſe of the verb ; it taketh of a Noun the gender, caſe, and declenſion ; and of both, number and figure.

In *Spaniſh* there are four Participles, as in *Latin*, viz. of the

<i>Latin</i>	<i>Spaniſh.</i>
Pref. Ten. in { <i>ans</i> as <i>amans</i> { <i>ens</i> as <i>audiens</i> }	in { <i>ante</i> as { <i>amante</i> , loving, who loves { <i>ente</i> as { <i>oyénte</i> , hearing, who does hear.

N. B.



*N. B.* That this Participle is likewise supplied in the *Spanish* language by the third person of the present tense of the indicative Mood, the relative *el* and *que*, as *elque áma*, he who does love ; it governs generally in *Spanish* a genitive, as *amante de Dios* ; and is of the gender of common of three, as *el amante, la amante, lo amante*.

<i>Latin</i>		<i>Spanish</i>	
Of the pret.	tus amatus	do	{ amádo, loved, vísto, seen, connéxo, &c. join'd or added.
or	in { fus as visus	in to	
Passive	xus connexus	xo, &c.	

<i>Latin</i>		<i>Spanish</i>	
Of the future	in { rus as futururus	in { úro éero, as &c.	{ futúro ventúro venidéro, &c. } which is to come.
	venturus		

*Note,* That this Participle is supplied in *Spanish* by the auxiliar verb *havér*, or by *tenér*, with the particle *de*, and the infinitive of the verb, as *amaturus fueram, havía de amár*, I had to love ; *tengo, or he de amár*, I am to love, &c.

Of Fut. in { dus as *Amandus* : But this in *Spanish* is supplied by the auxiliar Verbs *havér* and *sér*, the particle *de*, and the participle of the preter of the Verb, as *Amandus est, bá de sér amádo*, he is to be loved, &c.

### *Gerunds.*

The Gerunds are terminated in *Spanish* in { ando as amádo, loving,  
endo as oyédo, bearing,

And govern the case of the Verb, as *amando a Dios*, loving God : The Gerund of genitive is formed of the particle *de*, and the infinitive of the Verb thus, *de amar*, of loving ; and that of accusative thus, *à amar*, to love.

*Supines.*

## SUPINES.

**T**HERE are two Supines in *Spanish*, by way of circumlocution, one active, as *à amár*, to love; the other passive, as *à ser amado*, to be loved.

This, it is hoped, will be sufficient to bring the Reader into the knowledge of every thing required for the conjugation of verbs; as for the rest, we refer him to the third part of this Grammar, where under their proper heads he will find every thing necessary for the construction.

## PERSONS.

**T**HERE are also in Verbs three Persons in both numbers, *viz.*

Sing.	yo <i>I</i>	as {	yo ámo, <i>I love</i>
	tu, <i>thou,</i>		tu ámas, <i>thou lovest</i>
	el, or aquél <i>he</i>		aquel áma, <i>he loveth.</i>
Plur.	nos, or nosotros, <i>we</i>	as {	nosotros amamos, <i>we love</i>
	vos, or vosotros, <i>ye</i>		vosotros amáis, <i>ye love</i>
	ellos, or aquéllos, <i>they</i>		aquéllos aman, <i>they love.</i>

By the first person, we note, he who speaks; by the second, to whom we speak; and by the third, the person of whom we speak.

*N. B.* That the *Spaniards* very seldom make use of the second Person singular or plural, but when through a great familiarity among friends; when they speak to God, wife and husband to themselves, to children, or servants; instead thereof, when they speak to others, they make use of *Usted* in singular, or *Ustedes* in plural, or of *Vuestra Mercéd*, and *Vuestras Mercedes*, *you*, your Worship, your Merits, or Deservings; which are signs of the third person, of which they make use of in speaking: In writing they do always make use of

G

*Vuestra*



82      *The RUDIMENTS of*  
*Vuestra Merced*, thus *v. m<sup>d</sup>*. in singular, or *v. m<sup>ds</sup>*. in plural.

Observe here, that when an adjective comes after *Vuestra Merced*, it does not agree in the gender with *v. m<sup>d</sup>*., but with the person to whom we speak, or spoke of; when to a Man, thus *Vuestra Merced sea bien venido*, you are welcome: when to a Woman, thus, *Vuestra Merced sea bien venida*, you are welcome, and so in the plural. It can't be amiss, if at present I take notice of

*The manner used by the Spaniards in saluting or complimenting one another.*

**T**HEY make use of *Usted*, or *Vuestra Merced* in general for persons, or among persons below those of the Nobility and Gentry, as *como está v. m<sup>d</sup>.?* or *como le va a v. m<sup>d</sup>.?* or *como se bálle v. m<sup>d</sup>.?* or as newly introduced by strangers, *como se porta v. m<sup>d</sup>.?* how do you do, &c. Answer, *Mui bien para servirle*, (or *para servir a v. m<sup>d</sup>.*) or *Buén*o (that is *ensalúd*) *para que me mande*, &c. *Caballéro buenos días* (that is, *éste y otros mas*) *ténga v. m<sup>d</sup>.*, Good morrow, Sir; *Buenas nóches ténga v. m<sup>d</sup>.*, Good Night to you, Sir; it is used in Spanish *buen día tenga v. m<sup>d</sup>.*, but not *Buena nóche* in singular.

*Béso las Mános de v. m<sup>d</sup>.*, I kiss your Hands; answer, *Y yo las* (sup. *Mános*) *de v. m<sup>d</sup>.*

For *v. m<sup>d</sup>. me ága* (or *ágame*) *la Mercéd*, or *favór de ésto*, they say generally *v. m<sup>d</sup>. me la* (viz. *Mercéd*) *ága de ésto*, do me the Favour of this, or grant me the favour, &c.

We use to say *Buen día*, or *buenos días dé Dios a v. m<sup>d</sup>.*, God give you a good Day, for good morrow, Sir, &c. as for the other ranks of persons, we say, to the King, *Vuestra Magestád*, Your Majesty; to the Pope, *Santidád*, *Beautitúd*, *Sanctíssimo Pádre*, *Beatíssimo Pádre*, Holiness, Most Holy Father (Titles which should be given only to God); to a Prince  
I
*V. Alteza*,

*V. Altéza*, your Highness; to a Cardinal, *V. Eminéncia*, your Eminency; to the Grandees, Dukes, Generals, and Ambassadors *V. Exceléncia*, your Excellency; to a Bishop, *Vuestra Señoría ilustrísima*, your illustrious Lordship; to Earls, Marquesses, *Vuestra Señoría*. Note, That some use *Vuéstra*, and *Vuéssa* promiscuously; but I am of opinion that *Vuéssa* is a word out of use, &c.

I observed, that some of the Nobility in Spain, when they speak to any Gentleman inferior in rank, never did make use of *Béso las Manos de v. m<sup>d</sup>*, but *Servidor de v. m<sup>d</sup>*; and so they say *v. m<sup>d</sup> sea bien venido*, or *bien venido sea el Señor Fuláno*; *buénos días dé Dios al Sr. Fuláno*, &c. And when an inferior spoke to them he would be better off, if he said *Béso las Mános de V. Señoría*, than saying *Servidór de V. Señoría*; but at present this difference is almost left off, &c.

The preceding Spanish Words are abbreviated thus in writing: *V. Mgd*; *V. Santd*, or *Beatd*, *SS.* or *BB.* *Pádre*; *V. Alt*; *V. Em*; *V. Exc*; *V. S. il*; *V. S.*; *V. M<sup>d</sup>*.

### *Of the Auxiliar Verbs.*

**A**UXILIAR Verbs take their etymology of the Latin *Auxilium*, *Auxílio*, help, so called, because they are wanted, and help to the conjugation of other Verbs. There are auxiliar or helping Verbs in all the living languages, and in the Spanish there are more than in any other, as *podér*, *tenér*, *solér*, *ir*, &c. without which we can't rightly explain the meaning of some tenses; but there are three Principal, viz. *havér* (instead of whom we do likewise use the Verb *tenér*) to have, *estár* and *fér*, to be; the two first serve for the active, neuter, and reciprocal Verbs; *havér* serves also for the passive Verbs in their compound tenses,

84      *The RUDIMENTS of*  
 tenses, as in the Preterperfect, Pluperfect, &c. and  
 the Verb *ser* serves for the passive Verbs. And as  
 the other Verbs can't be conjugated without these,  
 we think it proper to begin by

*The Conjugation of the Auxiliary Verb Haver, To have.*

### The Indicative Mood. Present Tense.

<i>Sing.</i>		<i>Plur.</i>	
Yo hé,	<i>I have</i>	{ Nosótro <span style="font-size: 2em; vertical-align: middle;">s</span> hémos, or havémos, Vosótro <span style="font-size: 2em; vertical-align: middle;">s</span> havéis, Ellos or aquéllos han,	<i>We have</i>
Tu has,	<i>Thou hast</i>		<i>Ye have</i>
El or aquél há	<i>He hath</i>		<i>They have</i>

### Preterimperfect.

<i>Sing.</i>		<i>Plur.</i>	
Havía,	<i>I had</i>	{ Havíamos Havíades, or havíais Havían	<i>We had</i>
Havías	<i>Thou hadst</i>		<i>Ye had</i>
Havía,	<i>He had</i>		<i>They had</i>

### First Preterperfect.

<i>Sing.</i>		<i>Plur.</i>	
Húve	<i>I have had</i>	{ Huvimos, Huvistes, Huvieron,	<i>We have had</i>
Huviste	<i>Thou hast had</i>		<i>Ye have had</i>
Húvo	<i>He hath had</i>		<i>They have had</i>

### Second Preterperfect.

<i>Sing.</i>	{	Yo hé	{	Havido,	{	<i>I have had</i>
		Tu has				<i>Thou hast had</i>
		El há				<i>He hath had</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	{	Nosotros hémos			<i>We have had</i>	
		Vosotros havéis			<i>Ye have had</i>	
		Ellos han			<i>They have had</i>	

The third Preterperfect thus :

**Yo húve huido**

*Is in no use in Spanish.*

**I**

**Preter-**



Preterpluperfect.

Sing.	{	Havía	} Havido,	{	I had had
		Havías			Thou badst had
		Havía			He had had
Plur.	{	Havíamos			We had had
		Haviádeis			Ye had had
		Havían			They had had

First Future.

Sing.	{	Havré,	I shall or will have
		Havrás,	You shall or will have
		Havrá,	He shall or will have
Plur.	{	Havrémos	We shall or will have
		Havréis	Ye shall or will have
		Havrán	They shall or will have.

The other Futures are

Second,	Yo hé de haver	I must have.
Third,	Havré de haver	I shall be obliged to have
Fourth,	Havía de haver	I was to have

Imperative Mood.

Sing.	{	Háyas tu	Have thou
		Háya aquél, or el	Have he, or let him have
Plur.	{	Hayámos nosótro,	Have we, or let us have
		Havéd vosótro,	Have ye, or let ye have
		Háyan aquéllos or ellos	Have they, or let them have.

The Spaniards use, instead of this Imperative Mood, the Word *Ten*, of *Tengo*, I have or hold; which *Tengo* is often used for this Verb *He*.

This Imperative Mood *Ten*, of *Tengo*, so commonly used for *áyas*, *ayá*, is thus declined :

Sing.	{	Ten tu,	Have, or hold thou
		Tenga el	Let him have or hold
Plur.	{	Tengámos nosótro	Let us have or hold
		Tened vosótro	Do ye have or hold
		Tengan ellos,	Let them have or hold.

See this Verb among the Irregulars.

*Note*, The Optative Mood is us'd with these signs, as I have said, *Oxalá*, or *O si*, or *Plugiéssse a Dios*, Would to God, I pray God, or God grant. The Potential like the *Latin*, with these signs, *may*, *can*, *might*, *could*, *should*, or *ought*; both declined like the Subjunctive following.

### Subjunctive Mood.    Present Tense.

<i>Sing.</i>	{	Háya,	}	<i>If, or when I may have, &amp;c.</i>
<i>Si, or</i>	{	Háyas		
<i>como</i>	{	Háya		
<i>Plur.</i>	{	Hayámos	}	<i>If, or when We may have, &amp;c.</i>
<i>Si, or</i>	{	Hayáis		
<i>como</i>	{	Háyan		

### Three Preterimperfects.

<i>Si, or</i>	{	Huviéra, huviéssse, havría	}	<i>If, or when I might, could, or should have.</i>
<i>como</i>		Huviéras, huviéssses, havrias		
<i>Sing.</i>	{	Huviéra, huviéssse, havría		
<i>Plur.</i>	{	Huviéramos, huviésssemos, havriámos	}	
<i>Si, or</i>	{	Huviéradeis, huviéssseis, havriadeis		
<i>como</i>	{	Huviéran, huviéssen, havrían.		

### Preterperfect.

<i>Sing.</i>	{	Háya,	{	<i>If, or when I had, or when I have had.</i>
<i>Si, or</i>		Háyas		
<i>como</i>		Háya		
<i>Plur.</i>	{	Hayámos	{	<i>If, or when We had, &amp;c.</i>
<i>Si, or</i>		Hayáis		
<i>como</i>		Háyan		

### Two Preterpluperfects.

<i>Sing.</i>	{	Huviéra, or huviéssse	{	<i>If, or when I had had, &amp;c.</i>
<i>Si, or</i>		Huviéras, or huviéssses		
<i>como</i>		Huviéra, or huviéssse		
<i>Plur.</i>	{	Huviéramos, or huviésssemos	{	<i>If, or when We had had, &amp;c.</i>
<i>Si, or</i>		Huviéradeis, or huviéssseis		
<i>como</i>		Huviéran, or huviéssen		

# First Future.

<i>Sing.</i>	{ Huviére	} <i>If, or when I shall have hereafter, &amp;c.</i>
<i>Si, or</i>	{ Huviéres	
<i>como</i>	{ Huviére	
<i>Plur</i>	{ Huviéremos	
<i>Si, or</i>	{ Huviéredeis	
<i>como</i>	{ Huviéren	

# Second Future.

Huviére	} <i>Havido</i> { <i>If, or when I shall have had, &amp;c.</i>	}
Huviéres		
Huviére		
Huviéremos		
Huviéreis		
Huviéren		

*or otherwise* *havié havido.*

# Infinitive Mood.

<i>Havér</i>	<i>To have.</i>
<i>Haver havido</i>	<i>To have had.</i>
<i>Haver de haver</i>	<i>To have hereafter.</i>
<i>Gerund. Haviendo,</i>	<i>Having.</i>

# Participles.

<i>Pres. El que ha</i>	<i>The person who has</i>
<i>Pas. Havido</i>	<i>Had</i>
<i>Supine à havér</i>	<i>To have, in having, &amp;c.</i>

*Note, That the Spanish Academy hath changed* *havér* *into* *habér* ; but as this innovation is against the practice both of ancient and modern Authors, I thought proper to conjugate and retain *havér*.

*The other Auxiliary Verbs* *Estár, and Ser, To be.*

# Indicative Mood.

## Present Tense.

<i>Sing.</i>	{ Yo <i>estói</i>	Yo <i>sói</i>	} <i>I am</i>
	{ Tu <i>estás</i>	Tu <i>és</i>	
	{ El <i>está</i>	El <i>es</i>	
<i>Plur.</i>	{ Nosotros <i>estámos</i>	Nosotros <i>sómos</i>	} <i>We are</i>
	{ Vosotros <i>estáis</i>	Vosotros <i>sois</i>	
	{ Ellos <i>están</i>	Ellos <i>son</i>	

G 4

Preter-



## Preterimperfect.

<i>Sing.</i>	{	Yo <i>estába</i>	Yo <i>éra</i>	{	<i>I was</i>
		Tu <i>estabas</i>	Tu <i>éras</i>		<i>Thou wast</i>
		El <i>estaba</i>	El <i>éra</i>		<i>He was</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	{	Nosotros <i>estábamos</i>	Nosotros <i>éramos</i>	{	<i>We were</i>
		Vosotros <i>estábais or</i> <i>estábadeis</i>	Vosotros <i>érais, or</i> <i>éradeis</i>		<i>Ye were</i>
		Ellos <i>estaban</i>	Ellos <i>éran</i>		<i>They were</i>

## First Preterperfect.

<i>Sing.</i>	{	<i>Estúve</i>	<i>Fuí</i>	{	<i>I have been</i>
		<i>Estuviste</i>	<i>Fuiste</i>		<i>Thou hast been</i>
		<i>Estuvo</i>	<i>Fué</i>		<i>He hath been</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	{	<i>Estuvimos</i>	<i>Fuimos</i>	{	<i>We have been</i>
		<i>Estuvisteis</i>	<i>Fuisteis</i>		<i>Ye have been</i>
		<i>Estuvieron</i>	<i>Fuéron</i>		<i>They have been</i>

## Second and Third Preterperfect.

<i>Sing.</i>	{	<i>He, or hube</i> <i>estado</i>	<i>He, or hube</i> <i>sido</i>	{	<i>I have been, &amp;c.</i>
		<i>Has, or huviste</i> <i>estado</i>	<i>Has, or huviste</i> <i>sido</i>		
		<i>Ha, or huvo</i> <i>estado</i>	<i>Ha, or huvo</i> <i>sido</i>		
<i>Plur.</i>	{	<i>Havemos, or</i> <i>huvimos estado</i>	<i>Havemos, or</i> <i>huvimos sido</i>	{	<i>I have been, &amp;c.</i>
		<i>Havéis, or</i> <i>huvisteis estado</i>	<i>Havéis, or</i> <i>huvisteis sido</i>		
		<i>Han, or</i> <i>huvieron estado</i>	<i>Han, or</i> <i>huvieron sido</i>		

## Preterpluperfect.

<i>Sing.</i>	{	<i>Havía estado</i>	<i>Havía sido</i>	{	<i>I had been, &amp;c.</i>
		<i>Havías estado</i>	<i>Havías sido</i>		
		<i>Havía estado</i>	<i>Havía sido</i>		
<i>Plur.</i>	{	<i>Havíamos estado</i>	<i>Havíamos sido</i>	{	<i>I had been, &amp;c.</i>
		<i>Havíadeis, or havíais</i> <i>estado</i>	<i>Havíais, or haviadeis</i> <i>sido</i>		
		<i>Havían estado</i>	<i>Havían sido</i>		

### First Future.

Sing.	{	Estaré	Seré	} <i>I shall, or will be, &amp;c.</i>
		Estarás	Serás	
		Estará	Será	
Plur.	{	Estarémos	Serémos	
		Estaréis	Seréis	
		Estarán	Serán	

### Second Future.

Sing.	{	He, or Téngo de estar	He de ser	} <i>I must be, &amp;c.</i>
		Has de estar	Has de ser	
		Ha de estar	Ha de ser	
Plur.	{	Hémos de estar	Hémos de ser	
		Havéis de estar	Havéis de ser	
		Han de estar	Han de ser	

### Third Future.

Havré de estar, or sér      *I shall be obliged to be*

### Fourth Future.

Havía de estar, or sér      *I had to be, or I was to be.*

### Imperative Mood.

Sing.	{	Está tu	Se tu	} <i>Be thou</i>
		Esté el	Séa el	
Plur.	{	Estémos nosótro	Seámos nosótro	
		Estád vosótro	Sed vosótro	
		Estén ellos	Séan ellos	

Subjunctive

## Subjunctive Mood.

### Present Tense.

<i>Sing.</i>	{ Esté	Séa	} <i>If, or when I am, &amp;c.</i>
<i>Si, or</i>	{ Estés	Séas	
<i>como</i>	{ Esté	Séa	
<i>Plur.</i>	{ Estémos	Seámos	
<i>Si, or</i>	{ Estéis	Seáis	
<i>como</i>	{ Estén	Séan	

### Three Preterimperfects.

<i>Sing.</i>	{	Estuviéra estuviésse, or	Fuéra, fuésse, sería	} <i>If, or when I was, &amp;c.</i>
<i>Si, or</i>		estaría		
<i>como</i>		Estuviéras estuviésse, or	Fuéras, fuésse, serías	
		estarias		
		Estuviéra estuviésse, or	Fuéra, fuésse, sería	
		estaría		
	{	Estuviéramos estuviésse-	Fuéramos, fuéssemos,	} <i>If, or when I was, &amp;c.</i>
		mos, or estaríamos	seríamos	
<i>Plur.</i>		Estuviéradeis,	Fuéradeis, fuéssedeis,	
<i>Si, or</i>	{	estuviéssedeis,	seriadeis	
<i>como</i>		or estariadeis		
		Estuviéran estuviéssen,	Fuéran, fuéssen, se-	
		or estarían	rían	

### Preterperfect.

<i>Sing.</i>	{	Haya estado	Haya sido	} <i>If, or when I have been, &amp;c.</i>
<i>Si, or</i>		Hayas estado	Hayas sido	
<i>como</i>		Haya estado	Haya sido	
<i>Plur.</i>	{	Hayamos estado	Hayamos sido	
<i>Si, or</i>		Hayáis estado	Hayáis sido	
<i>como</i>		Hayan estado	Hayan sido	

### First and Second Preterpluperfect.

<i>Sing.</i>	{	Huviéra, or huviésse	} <i>estado</i>	} <i>sido</i>	} <i>If, or when I had been, &amp;c.</i>
<i>Si, or</i>		Huviéras, or huviésse			
<i>como</i>		Huviéra, or huviésse			
<i>Plur.</i>	{	Huviéramos, or huviéssemos			
<i>Si, or</i>		Huviéradeis, or huviéssedeis			
<i>como</i>		Huvieran, or huviéssen			

First



# First Future.

<i>Sing.</i>	{ Estuviére	Fuere	} <i>If I shall, or should be, or If, or when I had been, &amp;c.</i>
<i>Si, or</i>	{ Estuviéres	Fuéres	
<i>como</i>	{ Estuviére	Fuere	
<i>Plur.</i>	{ Estuviéremos	Fuéremos	
<i>Si, or</i>	{ Estuviéredeis	Fuéredeis	
<i>como</i>	{ Estuviéren	Fuéren	

# Second Future.

<i>Sing.</i>	{ Huviére	} <i>Estádo</i>	} <i>Sído</i>	} <i>When I shall, or should have been, &amp;c.</i>
<i>Si, or</i>	{ Huviéres			
<i>como</i>	{ Huviére			
<i>Plur.</i>	{ Huviéremos			
<i>Si, or</i>	{ Huviéredes			
<i>como</i>	{ Huviéren			

*or quando havré estádo, or sído.*

# Infinitive Mood.

<i>Pres.</i>	Estár,	Sér	} <i>To be. To have been. To be hereafter. Being.</i>
<i>Pret. perf.</i>	Havér estádo,	Havér sído,	
<i>Future</i>	Havér de estár,	Havér de sér,	
<i>Gerund.</i>	Estando, siendo		

# Participles.

<i>Pres.</i>	Elque esta, or es,	<i>The Person who is.</i>
<i>Pas.</i>	Estádo, Sído,	<i>Been.</i>
<i>Sup.</i>	à estár, à sér	<i>To be in being.</i>

*The Optative is the same as the Subjunctive.*

**B**OTH these Verbs *Estár* and *Sér* signify *To be*, the *English* having no word to distinguish between them, and yet they cannot be indifferently used, there being a considerable difference between them, which is, that *Sér* signifies the proper and inseparable Essence of a Thing, denoting the Quality, or Quantity, as *Sér buéno*, to be good ; *Sér málo*, to be wicked ; *Sér gránde*, to be big ; *Sér pequéño*, to be little, &c. But *Estár* denotes Place, or some adjunct

adjunct Quality, as *Estár en cása*, to be at home ; *Estár buéno*, to be well ; *Estár málo*, or *enférmo*, to be sick. For in enquiring after a Man's Health, the Spaniards make use of the word *Estár*, as *como estáis ?* How do you ? The Answer is, *Estói buéno*, or *málo*. I am well or ill. Though sometimes the Answer is without the Verb, saying only, *buéno*, or *málo*, well or sick ; or placing the Verb after the Adjective, as *buéno estói*, I am well. Where it is to be observed that *buéno* and *málo*, do not signify good and bad, as they do upon other occasions, but well or ill. In short, *estár*, is us'd to express any thing that concerns the affections, or passions of the Soul, as *estói triste*, I am melancholy, *estói alegre*, I am merry. So that as has been said *ser* must be used to denote the inseparable Essence, or Being, whereas *estár* implies Accidents, as *El vestido es buéno, pero está mal bécho*, the Cloaths are good, but they are ill made ; where we see the essential Being of the Thing itself under the word *ser*, or *es*, and the accidental fault of its being ill made under the word *estár*. *Ser* likewise is used to express the condition, or temper of a Man in its nature, as *éste hombre es colérico de condicion*, this Man is of a colerick disposition ; and *estar* expresses the fit or action, as *éste hombre está colérico*, this Man is actually angry, or is in a colerick fit.

*Example of the first Conjugation of Verbs regular in ar, as Revelár, to reveal, or discover.*

### Indicative Mood.

#### Present Tense.

Sing.	{	Yo revélo	<i>I reveal.</i>
		Tu revélas	<i>Thou, or you reveal.</i>
		El revéla	<i>He reveals.</i>
Plur.	{	Nosotros revelámos	<i>We reveal.</i>
		Vos reveláis	<i>Ye reveal.</i>
		Ellos revélan	<i>They reveal.</i>

Preter-

# Preterimperfect.

Sing.	{	Yo revelába	<i>I did reveal, or I was revealing.</i>
		Tu revelábas	<i>You did reveal.</i>
		El revelába	<i>He did reveal.</i>
Plur.	{	Nosótro	<i>We did reveal.</i>
		Vosótro	<i>Ye did reveal.</i>
		Ellos	<i>They did reveal.</i>

# First Preterperfect.

Sing.	{	Revelé	<i>I revealed.</i>
		Reveláste	<i>You revealed.</i>
		Reveló	<i>He revealed.</i>
Plur.	{	Revelámos	<i>We revealed.</i>
		Revelásteis	<i>Ye revealed.</i>
		Reveláron	<i>They revealed.</i>

# Second and Third Preterperfect.

Sing.	{	He, or huvé	} Reveládo,	{	<i>I have revealed</i>
		Has, or huviste			<i>Thou hast revealed</i>
		Ha, or húvo			<i>He hath revealed</i>
Plur.	{	Havémos, or huvimos			<i>We have revealed</i>
		Havéis, or huvisteis			<i>Ye have revealed</i>
		Han, or huvieron			<i>They have revealed.</i>

# Preterpluperfect.

Sing.	{	Havía	} Reveládo,	{	<i>I had revealed</i>
		Havías			<i>Thou hadst revealed</i>
		Havía			<i>He had revealed</i>
Plur.	{	Havíamos			<i>We had revealed</i>
		Havíadeis			<i>Ye had revealed</i>
		Havían			<i>They had revealed.</i>



## First Future.

Sing.	{	Revelaré,		<i>I shall or will reveal</i>
		Revelarás,		<i>You shall or will reveal</i>
		Revelará,		<i>He shall or will reveal</i>
Plur.	{	Revelaremos,		<i>We shall or will reveal</i>
		Revelaréis,		<i>Ye shall or will reveal</i>
		Revelarán,		<i>They shall or will reveal.</i>

## Second Future.

Sing.	{	He, or tengo de revelár,		
		Has de revelár,		
		Ha de revelár,		
Plur.	{	Hémos, or havémos de re-		<i>I am to or must reveal, &amp;c.</i>
		velár,		
		Havéis de revelár,		
		Han de revelár,		

## Third Future.

Sing.	{	Havré		de Revelár		
		Havrás				
		Havrá				
Plur.	{	Havrémos		de Revelár		<i>I shall be obliged to reveal, &amp;c.</i>
		Havréis				
		Havrán				

## Fourth Future.

Sing.	{	Havía		de Revelár		
		Havías				
		Havía				
Plur.	{	Havíamos		de Revelár		<i>I had, or I was to reveal, &amp;c.</i>
		Haviádeis				
		Havían				

## Imperative Mood.

Sing.	{	Revéla tu,		<i>Do you reveal, or reveal thou</i>
		Revéle el,		<i>Let him reveal.</i>

Plur.

<i>Plur.</i>	{	Revelémos nosótro	<i>Let us reveal.</i>
		Revelád vosótro	<i>Do ye reveal, or let ye reveal.</i>
		Revélen éll	<i>Let them reveal.</i>

*The Optative and Subjunctive Moods, with their Signs Si, Cómo, Oxalá, Aunque.*

*If, When, would God, God Grant.*

### Present Tense.

<i>Sing.</i>	{	Yo revéle	}	<i>When, or God grant, &amp;c. I reveal, &amp;c.</i>
		Tu revéles		
		El revéle		
<i>Plur.</i>	{	Nosótro		
		Vosótro		
		Ellos revélen,		

### Preterimperfect.

<i>Sing.</i>	{	Revelára, revelásse, revelaría	}	<i>When, or would to God I did reveal, &amp;c.</i>
		Reveláras, revelásstes, revelarías		
		Revelára, revelásse, revelaría		
<i>Plur.</i>	{	Reveláramos, revelássemos, revelariá		
		Reveláradeis, revelásseis, revelariadeis		
		Reveláran, revelássem, revelarian.		

### Three Preterperfect.

<i>Sing.</i>	{	Haya,	}	Reveládo,	{	<i>When, or would to God, &amp;c. I have reveal, &amp;c.</i>
		Hayas,				
		Haya,				
<i>Plur.</i>	{	Hayámos				
		Hayáis				
		Hayan				

## First and Second Preterpluperfects.

<i>Sing.</i>	{ Huviéra, or huviéſſe Huviéras, or huviéſſes Huviéra, or huviéſſe	} Reveládo,	{ When or would to God, &c. I had reveal- ed, &c.
<i>Plur.</i>	{ Huviéramos, or huviéſſemos Huviéradeis, or huviéſſedeis Huviéran, or huviéſſen		

## First Future.

<i>Sing.</i>	{ Reveláre, Reveláres, Reveláre,	}	{ When or would to God, &c. I ſhall or will reveal, &c.
<i>Plur.</i>	{ Reveláremos Reveláredeis Reveláren,		

## Second Future.

<i>Sing.</i>	{ Huviére Huviéres Huviére	} Reveládo,	{ When or would to God, &c. I ſhall or will have re- vealed, &c.
<i>Plur.</i>	{ Huviéremos Huviéredeis Huviéren		

*or otherwiſe* *havré* *reveládo.*

## Infinitive Mood.

## Present.

Revelár,

*To reveal.*

## Preterperfect.

Havér reveládo

*To have revealed.*

## Future.

Havér, or *eſperár* de revelár*To reveal hereafter.*

Gerund.



Gerund.

Revelando,

*Revealing.*

Supine of the Active Signification,

A revelár,

*To be about to reveal.*

Supine of the Passive Signification,

A ser reveládo,

*To be revealed.*

Participle of the Present Tense and Active Voice,

Revelante, or el que revéla,

*Revealing.*

Participle of the Preter Tense and Passive Voice,

Reveládo,

*Revealed.*

All regular Verbs that have their Infinitive in *ar*, are conjugated in all Points like this. The Irregular shall be treated of, after the following List of regular Verbs in *ar*, above spoken of.

*Regular Verbs in ar.*

**L** AMár, *to call.*  
 Ayunár, *to fast.*  
 Comprár, *to buy.*  
 Recompensár, *to requite.*  
 Apartár, *to set aside.*  
 Separár, *to separate.*  
 Apelár, *to appeal.*  
 Acomodár, *to adjust.*  
 Peleár, *to fight.*  
 Cantár, *to sing.*  
 Llorár, *to weep.*

Aprovechár, *to profit.*  
 Cerár, *to sup.*  
 Hallár, *to find.*  
 Topár, *to find.*  
 Ganár, *to gain.*  
 Contestár, *to contest.*  
 Despojar, *to strip.*  
 Arrastrár, *to drag.*  
 Fiár, *to trust.*  
 Pagár, *to pay.*  
 Saqueár, *to plunder.*

**H**

Amenazár,

# 98 The RUDIMENTS of

Amenazar, *to threaten.*

Injuriar, *to revile.*

Afrontar, *to affront.*

Aventurar, *to venture.*

Matar, *to kill.*

Curar, *to cure, or heal.*

Sanar, *to heal, or recover health.*

Amedrantar, *to put into fear.*

Espantar, *to frighten.*

Manchar, *to spot, or stain.*

Alzar, *to take up.*

Levantar, *to raise.*

Sudar, *to sweat.*

Remediar, *to remedy.*

Cortar, *to cut.*

Atar, *to tie.*

Azotar, *to whip.*

Estimar, *to esteem.*

Borrar, *to blot out.*

Lavar, *to wash.*

Nadar, *to swim.*

Hurtar, *to steal.*

Robar, *to rob, to steal.*

Besar, *to kiss.*

Cabar, *to dig.*

Cazar, *to hunt.*

Hechar vino, o agua, *to pour out wine, or water.*

Hechar de beber, *to fill out drink.*

Hechar de casa, *to turn out of doors.*

Hechar una ayuda, *to give a chyster.*

Despavilar la vela, *to snuff the candle.*

Despavilar una cosa, *to make a thing vanish.*

Despavilar los ojos, *to awake from sleep.*

Alumbrar, *to light.*

Tomar, *to take.*

Quitar, *to remove, or to take away.*

Alabar, *to praise.*

Alquilar, *to hire.*

Perdonar, *to pardon.*

Caminar, *to travel.*

Recular, *to draw back.*

Adelantar, *to forward.*

Rehusar, *to refuse.*

Mandar, *to command.*

Disimular, *to dissemble.*

Engañar, *to deceive.*

Desengañar, *to undeceive.*

Bailar, *to dance.*

Danzar, *to dance.*

Domar, *to tame.*

Lisongear, *to flatter.*

Martyrizar, *to torment.*

Encantar, *to enchant.*

Desnudar, *to strip.*

Reposar, *to repose.*

Cansar, *to tire.*

Animar, *to encourage.*

Jurar, *to swear.*

Rezár, *to pray.*

Esternudar, *to sneeze.*

Callar, *to be silent.*

Pasear, *to walk.*

Alejar, *to set at a distance.*

Condenar, *to condemn.*

Dexar, *to leave.*

Olvidar, *to forget.*

Porñar, *to contend.*

Gastar, *to spend.*

Acusar, *to accuse.*

Aparejar, *to make ready.*

Despreciar, *to despise.*

Menospreciar, *to undervalue.*

Maltratar, *to misuse.*

Empeñar, *to engage.*

Acabar, *to finish.*

Amparar, *to protect.*

Desamparar, *to forsake.*

Mirar, *to look.*

Declarar, *to declare.*

Procurar, *to procure.*

Entrar, *to come in.*

Criar, *to breed.*

Embiar, *to send.*

Apear, *to alight.*

Retirar, *to retire.*

Abordar, *to come to shore.*

Arrebatar, *to snatch.*

Arrancar, *to tear up.*

Desarraigar, *to root up.*

Amansar, *to tame.*

Presentar, *to present.*

Representar,

Representár, *to represent.*  
 Desafiár, *to challenge.*  
 Ayudár, *to help.*  
 Disfamár, *to defame.*  
 Honrár, *to honour.*  
 Tapár, *to cover.*  
 Sitiár, *to besiege.*  
 Enojár, *to anger.*  
 Usár, *to use.*  
 Casár, *to marry.*  
 Amár, *to love.*

Conformár, *to conform.*  
 Visítár, *to visit.*  
 Confrontár, *to confront.*  
 Comparár, *to compare.*  
 Adorár, *to adore.*  
 Tartamudeár, *to stammer.*  
 Galanteár, *to court.*  
 Escaramuzár, *to skirmish.*  
 Disparár, *to discharge.*  
 Enfanchár, *to widen.*  
 Bambaleár, *to totter.*

It would be endless to pretend to mention all the Verbs of this sort, and therefore these may suffice ; but we may now proceed to the irregular Verbs of this Conjugation, which are many, and must be particularly taken notice of.

Here follow the irregular Verbs, which being under no certain Rule, must all be particularly conjugated.

*The first Conjugation of Verbs irregular in ar.*

Dar, *To give.*

Indicative Mood.

Present Tense.

Sing.	{	Yo dói	<i>I give</i>
		Tu dás	<i>You give</i>
		El da	<i>He gives</i>
Plur.	{	Nosótro <sup>s</sup> dámo <sup>s</sup>	<i>We give</i>
		Vosótro <sup>s</sup> dáis	<i>You give</i>
		Ellos dan	<i>They give.</i>



**Preterimperfect.**

<i>Sing.</i>	{	Dába	<i>I did give, or I was giving</i>
		Dábas	<i>You did give</i>
		Dába	<i>He did give</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	{	Dábamos	<i>We did give</i>
		Dábadeis, or dábaís	<i>Ye did give</i>
		Dában	<i>They did give</i>

**First Preterperfect.**

<i>Sing.</i>	{	Dí	<i>I gave</i>
		Díste	<i>You gave</i>
		Dió	<i>He gave</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	{	Dimos	<i>We gave</i>
		Dísteis	<i>Ye gave</i>
		Diéron	<i>They gave</i>

**Second and Third Preterperfect.**

<i>Sing.</i>	{	Yo he, or hube dado	<i>I have given</i>
		Tu has, or huviste dado	<i>You have given</i>
		El ha, or hubo dado	<i>He has given</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	{	Hémos, or huvimos dado	<i>We have given</i>
		Havéis, or huvisteis dado	<i>Ye have given</i>
		Han, or huvieron dado	<i>They have given.</i>

**Preterpluperfect.**

<i>Sing.</i>	{	Havía	}	Dádo,	{	<i>I had given, &amp;c.</i>
		Havías				
		Havía				
<i>Plur.</i>	{	Havíamos	}	Dádo,	{	<i>I had given, &amp;c.</i>
		Haviádeis				
		Havían				

**First Future.**

<i>Sing.</i>	{	Daré,	}	<i>I shall, or will give, &amp;c.</i>
		Darás,		
		Dará,		
<i>Plur.</i>	{	Darémos,	}	<i>I shall, or will give, &amp;c.</i>
		Daréis,		
		Darán.		

**Second**

Second Future.

Sing.	{	He, or Téngo de dár	}	<i>I am to, or must give, &amp;c.</i>
		Has de dár		
		Ha de dár		
Plur.	{	Havémos de dár		
		Havéis de dár		
		Han de dár		

Third Future.

Sing.	{	Havré	}	De dár,	{	<i>I shall be obliged to give, &amp;c.</i>
		Havrás				
		Havrá				
Plur.	{	Havrémos				
		Havréis				
		Havrán				

Fourth Future, *aliàs* a Tense of Circumlocution.

Sing.	{	Havía	}	De dár,	{	<i>I had to give, or I was to give, &amp;c.</i>
		Havías				
		Havía				
Plur.	{	Havíamos				
		Havíadeis				
		Havían				

Imperative Mood.

Sing.	{	Da tu,		Give thou
		De el,		Let him give
Plur.	{	Démos nosótro,		Let us give
		Dád vosótro,		Give ye
		Den ellos,		Let them give.

*Subjunctive and Optative Moods, with the Signs.*

{ *Cómo, Aunque, Oxalá,*  
 { *When, God grant, Would to God.*

## Present Tense.

Sing.	{	Yo de, Tu des, El de,	}	<i>When or God grant I do give, &amp;c.</i>
Plur.	{	Démos, Déis, Dén,		

## Three Preterimperfects.

Sing.	{	Diéra, diéſſe, daría Diéras, diéſſes, darías Diéra, diéſſe, daría	}	<i>When, or God grant I did give, or when I might, could, or should give.</i>
Plur.	{	Diéramos, diéſſemos, daríamos Diéradeis, or diérais, dariadeis, or daríais, diéſſedeis, or diéſſeis Diéran, diéſſen, darían		

## Preterperfect.

Sing.	{	Háya, Hi yas, Háya,	}	Dádo,	{	<i>When, or would to God, &amp;c. I had given, or when I have given, &amp;c.</i>
Plur.	{	Hayámos Hayáis Hayan				

## First and Second Preterpluperfect.

Sing.	{	Huviéra, or huviéſſe Huviéras, or huviéſſes Huviéra, or huviéſſe	}	Dádo,	{	<i>When, or would to God I had given, &amp;c.</i>
Plur.	{	Huviéramos, or huviéſſemos Huviéradeis, or huviéſſedeis Huviéran, or huviéſſen				

First



First Future.

<i>Sing.</i>	{	Diére	}	<i>When, or God grant I shall give, &amp;c.</i>
		Diéres		
		Diére		
<i>Plur.</i>	{	Diéremos		
		Diéredeis		
		Diéren		

Second Future.

<i>Sing.</i>	{	Huviére, or havré	}	<i>When, or God grant I shall or will give, &amp;c.</i>
		Huviéres		
		Huviére		
<i>Plur.</i>	{	Huviéremos		
		Huviéredes		
		Huviéren		

Infinitive Mood.

Present Tense.

Dar *To give*

Preterperfect Tense.

Havér dado *To have given*

Future.

Havér de dar *To give hereafter*

Gerund.

Dándo *Giving*

Participle Passive.

Dádo *Given*

Participle of the Present Tense, Active Voice,

Dante, *or* el que da                      Giving

Participle of the Future Tense.

El que ha, *or* espera de dar              To give hereafter

First Supine.

a Dár                      To be about to give

Second Supine.

A ser Dado                      To be given

*The next Irregular Verb of this Conjugation is,*

Almorzár, *To breakfast.*

Indicative Mood.

Present.

Sing.	{	Almuérzo	<i>I breakfast</i>
		Almuérzas	<i>You breakfast</i>
		Almuérza	<i>He breakfasts</i>
Plur.	{	Almorzamos	<i>We breakfast</i>
		Almorzáis	<i>Ye breakfast</i>
		Almuérzan	<i>They breakfast</i>

Preterperfect.

Sing.	{	Almorzába	<i>I did breakfast, or I was breakfasting</i>
		Almorzábas	<i>You did breakfast</i>
		Almorzába	<i>He did breakfast</i>

*Plur.*

<i>Plur.</i>	{	Almorzábamos	<i>We did breakfast</i>
		Almorzábais, or	<i>Ye did breakfast</i>
		Almorzábadeis	
		Almorzában	<i>They did breakfast</i>

### Preterimperfect.

<i>Sing.</i>	{	Almorzé	<i>I have breakfasted</i>
		Almorzaste	<i>You have breakfasted</i>
		Almorzó	<i>He has breakfasted</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	{	Almorzámos	<i>We have breakfasted</i>
		Almorzásteis	<i>Ye have breakfasted</i>
		Almorzaron	<i>They have breakfasted</i>

### Second and Third Preterperfect.

<i>Sing.</i>	{	He, or hube almorzado	<i>I have breakfasted</i>
		Has, or huviste almorzado	<i>You have breakfasted</i>
		Ha, or hubo almorzado	<i>He has breakfasted</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	{	Hémos, havémos, or huvimos almorzado	<i>We have breakfasted</i>
		Havéis, or huvisteis almorzado	<i>Ye have breakfasted</i>
		Han, or huvieron almorzado	<i>They have breakfasted</i>

### Preterpluperfect.

<i>Sing.</i>	{	Havía almorzado	<i>I had breakfasted</i>
		Havías almorzado	<i>You had breakfasted</i>
		Havía almorzado	<i>He had breakfasted</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	{	Haviámos almorzado	<i>We had breakfasted</i>
		Haviadéis almorzado	<i>Ye had breakfasted</i>
		Havían almorzado	<i>They had breakfasted</i>

### First Future.

<i>Sing.</i>	{	Almorzaré	} <i>I will, or shall breakfast,</i> <i>&amp;c.</i>
		Almorzarás	
		Almorzará	
<i>Plur.</i>	{	Almorzaremos	
		Almorzaréis	
		Almorzarán	



## Second Future.

Sing.	{	He, <i>or</i> <i>téngo</i> de almorzár	}	<i>I am to, or must breakfast, &amp;c.</i>
		Has de almorzár		
		Ha de almorzár		
Plur.	{	Hémos, <i>or</i> <i>havémos</i> de almorzár		
		Havéis de almorzár		
		Han de almorzár		

Havré de almorzár  
Havía de almorzár

*I shall be obliged to breakfast*  
*I was to breakfast.*

## Imperative Mood.

Sing.	{	Almuérza	}	<i>Do you breakfast</i>
		Almuérze		<i>Let him breakfast</i>
Plur.	{	Almorzémos		<i>Let us breakfast</i>
		Almorzád		<i>Do ye breakfast</i>
		Almuérzen		<i>Let them breakfast</i>

*The Optative and Subjunctive Moods, with the Signs Si, Cómo, Oxalá, Aunque.*

*If, When, would God, God grant.*

## Present Tense.

Sing.	{	Yo almuérze	}	<i>If, When, would to God I breakfast, &amp;c.</i>
		Tu almuérzes		
		El almuérze		
Plur.	{	Almorzémos		
		Almorzéis		
		Almuérzen		

### Three Preterimperfects.

Sing.	{	Almorzára, almorzásse, almorzaría	} <i>If, when, would to God I did breakfast, &amp;c.</i>
		Almorzáras, almorzásses, almorzarías	
		Almorzára, almorzásse, almorzaría	
Plur.	{	Almorzáramos, almorzássemos, almorzariámos	
		Almorzáradeis, almorzássedeis, almorzariádeis	
		Almorzáran, almorzássen, almorzarían	

### Preterperfect.

Sing.	{	Háya	} Almorzádo, { <i>If, when, would to God I have breakfasted, &amp;c.</i>
		Háyas	
		Háya	
Plur.	{	Hayámos	
		Hayáis	
		Háyan	

### First and Second Preterpluperfects.

Sing.	{	Huviéra, or huviéssse	} Almorzádo, { <i>If, when, would to God I had breakfasted, &amp;c.</i>
		Huviéras, or huviéssses	
		Huviéra, or huviéssse	
Plur.	{	Huviéramos, or huviésssemos	
		Huviéradeis, or huviéssseis	
		Huviéran, or huviéssen	

### First Future.

Sing.	{	Almorzáre	} <i>If, when, would to God I shall breakfast, &amp;c.</i>
		Almorzáres	
		Almorzáre	
Plur.	{	Almorzáremos	
		Almorzáredeis	
		Almorzáren	

### Second Future.

Sing.	{	Huviére, or havré	} Almorzádo, { <i>If, when, God grant I shall or will have breakfasted, &amp;c.</i>
		Huviéres	
		Huviére	
Plur.	{	Huviéremos	
		Huviéredeis	
		Huviéren	

Infinitive

Infinitive Mood,

Present.

Almorzar

*To breakfast*

Preterperfect.

Havér almorzáo

*To have breakfasted.*

Future.

Havér, or esperar de almorzar,

*To be to breakfast hereafter*

Gerund.

Almorzáo

*breakfasting*

First Supine.

à Almorzar

*To be about breakfasting*

Second Supine.

à ser almorzáo

*Having breakfasted*

Participle of the Present Tense and Active Voice.

El que almuérza

*Breakfasting*

Participle of the Preter Tense and Passive Voice.

Almorzáo

*Breakfasted, &c.*



The following Irregular Verbs of the first Conjugation, terminating in *ar*, are all conjugated after the same manner as *Almorzár*, changing the Penultima *o* into *ue* in the three Persons Singular, and the third of the Plural in all the Present Tenses.

Infinitive.	Present.	Preterperfect.
Contár, to count	Cuénto	Conté
Desollár, to flea	Desuélló	Desollé
Resollár, to breathe	Resuélló	Resollé
Acordár, to remember	Acuérdo	Acordé
Mostrár, to show	Muéstro	Mostré
Assolár, to destroy	Assuélo	Assolé
Volár, to fly	Uélo	Volé
Apostár, to wager	Apuésto	Aposté
Hollár, to trample on	Huélló	Hollé
Soltár, to let loose	Suéltó	Solté
Forzár, to force	Fuérho	Forcé
Provár, to try, or prove	Pruéro	Prové
Sonar, to sound	Suéno	Soné
Atronár, to thunder	Atruéno	Atroné
Degollár, to behead	Deguélló	Degollé
Consolár, to comfort	Consuélo	Consolé
Encontrár, to meet	Encuéntro	Encontré.

But *jugár* to play, changes *u* into *ue*.

All the Verbs ending in *gar* have the first person of the preterperfect of the indicative in *gue*; as likewise the third of the singular, the first and last of the plural of the imperative, and in all the persons of the present tense of the optative, as

Infinit.	Pres. Indic.	Pret. pe.	Imperative,	Pres. Optat.
Colgar, to hang	Cuélgo	Colgué	Cuélgue aquél	que yo Cuélgue
Rogar, to intreat	Ruégo	Rogué	Ruégue el	que Ruegue
Pagar, to pay	Págo	Pagué	Págue el	que yo Págue
Holgár, to be idle	Huélgo	Holgué	Huélgue el	que yo Huélgue
Regar, to water	Riégo	Régué	Riégue el	que yo Riégue &c.

The Verbs in *cár* change *car* in *que* in the first person of the preterperfect of the indicative; the third singular, the first and last of the plural in the imperative, and in all the persons of the present tense of the optative, as

*Infinit. Pres. Indic. Pret. p. Imperative, Pres. Optative,*

Tocár, <i>to touch,</i> <i>to feel.</i>	tóco	toqué	tóqué el	que yo toqué
Trocár, <i>to change</i>	truéco	troqu	truéque el	que yo truéque, &c.

The following Verbs change the penultima *e* into *ie* in all the persons singular, and the third of the plural of the present tense of the indicative, imperative, and optative, as

*Infinit. Pres. Indic. Imperative, Present Optative.*

Apretár, <i>to squeeze</i>	aprieto	aprieta tu	que yo apriete
Emmendar, <i>to mind</i>	emmiendo	emmienda tu	que yo emmiende
Empezár, <i>to begin</i>	empiezo	empiéza tu	que yo empiece
Cerrár <i>to shut</i>	Ciérro	Cierra tu	que yo cierre
Enterrar, <i>to bury</i>	entiérro	entierra tu	que yo entierre
Desterrar, <i>to banish</i>	destiérro	destierra tu	que yo destierre
Confessar, <i>to confess</i>	confiéso	confiéssa tu	que yo confiese

And several other more, whose irregularity is only in the following Tenses, as

*Tentár, to feel.*

*Present Indicative.*

Sing.	{ Tiénto, Tiéntas Tiénta }	<i>I feel, &amp;c.</i>	Plur.	{ Tentámos Tentáis Tiéntan }
-------	--	------------------------	-------	--

*Imperative.*

*Imperative.*

Sing.	{	Tienta tu,	Feel thou		Plur.	{	Tentemos nosótro
		Tiente el					Tentád vosótro
							Tienten aquellos

*Present Optative.*

Sing.	{	que Yotiente, that I may	Feel		Plur.	{	Tentémos
		Tiéntes					Tentéis
		Tiente					Tienten
otherwise they are conjugated as Revelár.							

The Verb *Andár*, to go, or to go about, has the preterperfect of the indicative irregular ; and generally when such tense is irregular, the first and the second Preterimperfects, and the first Future of the Optative are irregular, as

Sing.	Andúve	I have gone	Si, Anduviéra	Anduviéſſe	If I could go	qu. anduviére,	When I shall go
	Anduviſte		Anduviéras,	Anduviéſſes		Anduviéres	
Plur.	Andúvo		Anduviéra,	Anduviéſſe		Anduviére	
	Anduvímos		Anduviéramos,	Anduviéſſemos		anduviéremos	
	Anduviſteis,		Anduviéradeis,	Anduviéſſadeis,		anduviéredeis	
	Anduviéron		Anduviéran,	Anduviéſſen		anduviéren	
in other Tenses is conjugated as Revelár.							

*Of the Verbs Passive*

*Of the First Conjugation:*

**V**ERBS Passive are formed in *Spanish* from the Active, by the auxiliary Verb, and the Participle Passive of the Preterperfect Tense, following always the Moods and Tenses of the Verb *Sér*, as

*Sér amado,*

to be beloved.

Present



## Indicative.

## Present Tense.

<i>Sing.</i>	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{fôï} \\ \text{éres} \\ \text{es} \end{array} \right\}$	<i>amádo</i>	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{I am beloved} \\ \text{Thou art beloved} \\ \text{He is beloved} \end{array} \right\}$
<i>Plur.</i>	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{fomos} \\ \text{fôis} \\ \text{fon} \end{array} \right\}$	<i>amádos</i>	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{We are beloved} \\ \text{Ye are beloved} \\ \text{They are beloved} \end{array} \right\}$

## Imperfect Tense.

<i>Sing.</i>	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{éra} \\ \text{éras} \\ \text{éra} \end{array} \right\}$	<i>amádo</i>	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{I was beloved} \\ \text{Thou wast beloved} \\ \text{He was beloved} \end{array} \right\}$
<i>Plur.</i>	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{éramos} \\ \text{éradeis} \\ \text{éran} \end{array} \right\}$	<i>amádos</i>	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{We were beloved} \\ \text{Ye were beloved} \\ \text{They were beloved} \end{array} \right\}$

## Preterperfect.

<i>Sing.</i>	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{fuï, or he sido} \\ \text{fuïste, or has sido} \\ \text{fué, or ha sido} \end{array} \right\}$	<i>amádo</i>	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{I have been beloved} \\ \text{Thou has been beloved} \\ \text{He hath been beloved} \end{array} \right\}$
<i>Plur.</i>	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{fuïmos, or hémos sido} \\ \text{fuïsteis, or havéis sido} \\ \text{fuéron, or han sido} \end{array} \right\}$	<i>amádos</i>	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{We have been beloved} \\ \text{Ye have been beloved} \\ \text{They have been beloved} \end{array} \right\}$

## Preterpluperfect.

<i>Sing.</i>	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{Havía sido} \\ \text{Havías sido} \\ \text{Havía sido} \end{array} \right\}$	<i>amádo</i>	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{I had been beloved} \\ \text{Thou hadst been beloved} \\ \text{He had been beloved} \end{array} \right\}$
<i>Plur.</i>	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{Havíamos sido} \\ \text{Haviadeis sido} \\ \text{Havían sido} \end{array} \right\}$	<i>amádos</i>	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{We had been beloved} \\ \text{Ye had been beloved} \\ \text{They had been beloved} \end{array} \right\}$

## Future.

Seré amado, &amp;c.

*I shall be beloved*

And so throughout other Moods and Tenses.

*Of the Reciprocal Verbs.*

**T**HE reciprocal Verbs are all terminated in *se* in the infinitive Mood, as *Acejsárse* to lie down, or to grow near, or to come near; *Levantárse*, to rise up; *Librársé*, to discharge one's self, to make one's self free, &c. and are conjugated thus:

*Adelantárse*, to go before, to rise up to a Dignity or to Preferment.

Indicative Mood.

Present Tense.

Sing.	{	Me adelanto	}	<i>I go before, &amp;c.</i>
		Te adelantas		
		Se adelanta		
Plur.	{	Nos adelantamos		
		Vos, or os adelantáis		
		Se adelantan		

Imperfect.

Sing.	{	Me adelantaba	}	<i>I did go before, &amp;c.</i>
		Te adelantabas		
		Se adelantaba		
Plur.	{	Nos adelantábamos		
		Vos, or os adelantabades		
		Se adelantaban		

First Preterperfect.

Sing.	{	Me adelanté	}	<i>I went before.</i>
		Te adelantáste		
		Se adelantó		
Plur.	{	Nos adelantamos		
		Vos, or os adelantásteis		
		Se adelantaron		

Second Preterperfect.

<i>Sing.</i>	{ Me he Te has Se ha	} Adelantádo	{ <i>I have gone be- fore.</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	{ Nos hemos Vos, or os havéis Se han		

And so in all the Tenses and Moods, but in the Imperative thus :

<i>Sing.</i>	{ Adelántate tu Adelántese el	}	<i>Go thou before, &amp;c.</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	{ Adelantemosnos nosotros Adelantados vosotros Adelántense aquellos.		

The Verb *Pesárse*, *to be sorry*, is conjugated thus :

Indicative.

Present Tense.

<i>Sing.</i>	{ Péfame, or à mí mepéfa, Péfate, or à ti te péfa, Péfafe, or à el le péfa,	<i>I am sorry Thou art sorry He is sorry</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	{ Péfanos, or à nosotros nos péfa, Péfaos, or à vosotros os péfa, Péfales, or à ellos les péfa,	<i>We are sorry Ye are sorry They are sorry.</i>

And so throughout all other Tenses ; but in the Imperative Mood thus :

<i>Sing.</i>	{ Péfete, Péfele,	<i>Be thou sorry Let him be sorry</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	{ Péfenos, Péfeos, Péfeles,	<i>Let us be sorry Be ye sorry Let them be sorry</i>





### Future.

Nevará,	<i>It will snow.</i>
Que niéve,	<i>Let it snow.</i>
Será buéno que niéve,	<i>It will be good if that it snow.</i>
Si nevára, nevásse. or nevaría,	<i>If it would snow.</i>
Quando háya nevádo,	<i>When it hath snowed.</i>
Si huviéra, or huviéste nevado,	<i>If it had snowed.</i>
Quando neváre,	<i>When it shall snow</i>
Nevádo,	<i>Snowing.</i>
Los Campos están nevádos,	<i>The Fields are cover'd with snow.</i>
Niéve, a Noun,	<i>The snow.</i>

In this manner are conjugated the following  
Verbs :

Atrorár, or tronár, *to thunder*  
 Granizár, or apedreár, *to hail*  
 Helár, *to freeze*  
 Relampageár, *to lighten*  
 Ahumár, *to smoak*  
 Constár, *to be plain, or clear*  
 Importár, *to import, to be convenient*

The passive Impersonals are conjugated with the  
Particle *se* before or after the Verb, as

Se cuenta, *It is said, it is told, it is related, it is reported.*

Se contába, *It was said.*

Se contó

Se ha, or húvo contado } *It hath been said.*

Se havia contádo, *It had been said.*

Se contará, *It will be said.*

And so throughout all other Tenses and Moods.

N. B. That all the Verbs regular, or irregular, personals, or impersonals, except the regular passive, may be otherwise conjugated by the auxiliary Verb *Estár*, and the Gerund of the Verb. through all the Tenses and Moods, as

Present.

Present. Indicative.

Sing.	{	ámo <i>or</i> <i>estoi</i> amando, <i>I love, or I am loving, &amp;c.</i>
		ámas, <i>or</i> <i>estás</i> amando
		áma, <i>or</i> <i>está</i> amando
Plur.	{	amámos, <i>or</i> <i>estámos</i> amando
		amáis, <i>or</i> <i>estáis</i> amando
		áman, <i>or</i> <i>están</i> amando

Imperfect.

Amába, <i>or</i> <i>eslába</i> amando,	<i>I was loving</i>
--	---------------------

Perfect.

Amé, <i>or</i> <i>estúve</i> amando,	<i>I did love, &amp;c.</i>
Lámo, <i>or</i> <i>estói</i> llamando	<i>I call, or am calling</i>
Háblo, <i>or</i> <i>estói</i> hablando,	<i>I speak, or am speaking, &amp;c.</i>

The same is to be observed in all the Conjugations.

It must be observed here, that there are some Nouns called Verbals, for their being derived from the Verbs; in *Latin* those are terminated generally in *bilis*, in *tor*, and *ix*, and in *Spanish* in *ble*, *dor*, and *iz*: as

<i>Latin.</i>		<i>Spanish.</i>	
<i>bilis</i>	} as {	<i>ble</i>	} as {
<i>tor</i>		<i>dor</i>	
<i>ix</i>		<i>iz</i>	
	{ Amabilis		{ Amáble
	{ Amator		{ Amadór
	{ Amatrix		{ Amatríz, <i>or</i> amadóra.

But *note*, That there are some *Spanish* Verbs which are defectives in this particular, as well as some *Latin* Verbs.



*Of Verbs Regular of the second Conjugation, in er.*

Respondér,      *To answer.*

**Indicative Mood.**

**Present Tense.**

<i>Sing.</i>	{	Respóndo,	<i>I answer</i>
		Respóndes,	<i>You answer</i>
		Respónde,	<i>He answers</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	{	Respondémos,	<i>We answer</i>
		Respondéis	<i>Ye answer</i>
		Respónden,	<i>They answer</i>

**Preterimperfect.**

<i>Sing.</i>	{	Respondía,	<i>I did answer, or I was answering.</i>
		Respondías,	
		Respondía,	
<i>Plur.</i>	{	Respondíamos,	<i>You did answer</i>
		Respondíadeis,	<i>He did answer</i>
		Respondían,	<i>We did answer</i>
			<i>Ye did answer</i>
			<i>They did answer</i>

**First Preterperfect.**

<i>Sing.</i>	{	Respondí,	<i>I answered</i>
		Respondíste,	<i>You answered</i>
		Respondió,	<i>He answered</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	{	Respondímos,	<i>We answered</i>
		Respondísteis,	<i>Ye answered</i>
		Respondiéron,	<i>They answered</i>

Second

## Second and Third Preterperfect.

Sing.	{	He, or hube	} Respondido, {	{	<i>I have answered</i>
		Has, or huvisté			<i>You have answered</i>
		Ha, or huvo			<i>He has answered</i>
Plur.	{	Hémos, havémos, or			<i>We have answered</i>
		huvimos			
		Havéis, or huvisteis			<i>Ye have answered</i>
		Han, or huvieron			<i>They have answered</i>

## Preterpluperfect.

Sing.	{	Havía	} Respondido, {	<i>I had answered, &amp;c.</i>
		Havías		
		Havía		
Plur.	{	Havíamos		
		Haviades		
		Havian		

## First Future.

Sing.	{	Responderé,	} <i>I shall, or will answer, &amp;c.</i>
		Responderás,	
		Responderá,	
Plur.	{	Responderémos,	
		Responderéis,	
		Responderán,	

## Second Future.

Sing.	{	He, or Téngo de responder,	} <i>I am, to or must answer, &amp;c.</i>
		Has de responder	
		Ha de responder,	
Plur.	{	Hémos, or havémos de responder	
		Havéis de responder,	
		Han de responder,	

## Third Future.

Sing.	Havré de responder,	<i>I shall be oblig'd to answer.</i>
-------	---------------------	--------------------------------------

## Fourth Future.

Sing. *Havía de responder,**I was to answer.*

## Imperative Mood.

Sing.	{	Respónde tu,	<i>Do you answer, or answer thou</i>
		Respónnda el,	<i>Let him answer</i>
Plur.	{	Respondámos n <sup>os</sup>	<i>Let us answer.</i>
		Respondéd v <sup>os</sup>	<i>Do ye answer, or let you answer</i>
		Respondan ellos	<i>Let them answer</i>

*Subjunctive and Optative Moods, with the Signs.*

{ *Cómo, Aunque, Oxalá,*  
 { *When, God grant, Would to God.*

## Present Tense.

Sing.	{	Respónda,	}	<i>When, or God grant I do answer, &amp;c.</i>
		Respóndas,		
		Respónnda,		
Plur.	{	Respondámos,		
		Respondáis		
		Respóndan,		

## Three Preterimperfects.

Sing.	{	Respondiéra, respondiése, or	}	<i>When, or God grant I</i>
		respondería,		
		Respondieras, respondiesses, or		
Plur.	{	responderías,		
		Respondiéra, respondiése, or		
		respondería		
		Respondiéramos, respondiessedes,		
		or responderíamos		
		Respondierais, or respondiésemos,		
		or responderíades		
Plur.	{	Respondieran, respondiessen, or		
		responderían.		

*Preter.*



Preterperfect.

Sing.	Háya	} Respondido, {	<i>When, or would to God, &amp;c. I have answered, &amp;c.</i>
	Háyas		
	Háya		
Plur.	Hayámos		
	Hayáis		
	Háyan		

First and Second Preterpluperfect.

Sing.	Huviéra, or huviéſſe	} Respon- dido, {	<i>When, or would to God I had answered, &amp;c.</i>
	Huviéras, or huviéſſes		
	Huviéra, or huviéſſe		
Plur.	Huviéramos, or huviéſſemos		
	Huviéradeis, or huviéſſedeis		
	Huviéran, or huviéſſen		

First Future.

Sing.	Respondiere,	} {	<i>When, or God grant I ſhall, or will answer, &amp;c.</i>
	Respondieres,		
	Respondiere,		
Plur.	Respondiéremos,		
	Respondiéredeis,		
	Respondiéren		

Second Future.

Sing.	Huviére, or havré	} Respondido, {	<i>When, or God grant I ſhall or will have answered, &amp;c.</i>
	Huviéres,		
	Huviére		
Plur.	Huviéremos		
	Huviéredeis		
	Huviéren		

Infinitive Mood.

Present Tense.

Respondér,

*To answer.*

Preter-

Preterperfect Tense.

Havér respondido;

*To have answered.*

Future Tense.

Havér de responder,

*To be to answer.*

Gerund.

Respondiéndolo,

*Answering.*

Participle Active.

Respondiente, or el que responde,

*Answering.*

Participle Passive.

Respondido,

*Answered, &c.*

All other regular Verbs of the second Conjugation in *er*, are conjugated after the same manner ; of which take the following List :

*Verbs conjugated as Responder,*

**C**orrespondér, *to correspond.*

Comér, *to eat.*

Bebér, *to drink.*

Reprehendér, *to reprove.*

Barrér, *to sweep.*

Vendér, *to sell.*

Concedér, *to grant.*

Acometér, *to attack.*

Correr, *to run.*

Metér, *to put in.*

Prometér, *to promise.*

Ofendér, *to offend.*

Escondér, *to hide.*

Aprendér, *to learn.*

Temér, *to fear.*

Emprendér, *to undertake.*

Debér, *to owe.*

Cometér, *to commit.*

# *Of Verbs Irregular of the second Conjugation in er, as,*

Trahér, *to bring.*

Sabér, *to know.*

Tenér, *to have.*

Podér, *to be able.*

Querér, *to will or love.*

Ponér, *to put.*

Hacér, *to do.*

Cabér, *to be contained.*

Ver, *to see.*

Trahér, *To fetch or bring.*

## Indicative Mood.

### Present Tense.

Sing.	{	Yo tráhigo	<i>I fetch or bring</i>
		Tu tráhes	<i>You fetch or bring</i>
		El tráhe	<i>He fetches or brings</i>
Plur.	{	Nosótro <sup>s</sup> trahémos	<i>We fetch or bring</i>
		Vosótro <sup>s</sup> trahéis	<i>Ye fetch or bring</i>
		Ellos tráhen	<i>They fetch or bring.</i>

### Preterimperfect.

Sing.	{	Trahía	<i>I did fetch or bring</i>
		Trahías	<i>You did fetch or bring</i>
		Trahía	<i>He did fetch or bring</i>
Plur.	{	Trahíamos	<i>We did fetch or bring</i>
		Trahíais	<i>Ye did fetch or bring</i>
		Trahían	<i>They did fetch or bring.</i>

### First Preterperfect.

Sing.	{	Tráxe, or trúxe	<i>I have fetcht or brought</i>
		Traxíste, or truxíste	<i>You have fetcht or brought</i>
		Tráxo, or trúxo	<i>He hath fetcht or brought</i>
Plur.	{	Traxímos, or truxímos	<i>We have fetcht or brought</i>
		Traxísteis, or truxísteis	<i>Ye have fetcht or brought</i>
		Traxéron, or truxéron	<i>They have fetcht or brought</i>



Second and third Preterperfects.

Sing.	{	Hé, or huvé	}	Trahido,	{	<i>I have fetcht or brought, &amp;c.</i>
		Has				
		Ha				
Plur.	{	Hémos, or havémos	}			
		Havéis				
		Han				

Preterpluperfect.

Sing.	{	Havía	}	Trahído,	{	<i>I had fetcht or brought, &amp;c.</i>
		Havías				
		Havía				
Plur.	{	Haviámos				
		Haviádeis				
		Havian				

First Future.

Sing.	{	Traheré	}	<i>I shall or will fetch or bring, &amp;c.</i>
		Traherás		
		Traherá		
Plur.	{	Traherémos		
		Traheréis		
		Traherán		

Second Future.

Sing.	{	He, or téngo de trahér	}	<i>I am to or must fetch or bring, &amp;c.</i>
		Has de trahér		
		Ha de trahér		
Plur.	{	Hémos, or havémos de trahér	}	
		Havéis de trahér		
		Han de trahér		

*The third and fourth as in the other Verbs.*

Imperative Mood.

Sing.	{	Tráhe tu,	<i>Bring or fetch thou</i>
		Tráhiga el,	
			<i>Let him bring or fetch</i>
			<i>Plur.</i>

<i>Plur.</i>	{	Trahigámos nosótroſ,	<i>Let us bring or fetch</i>
		Trahéd voſótroſ,	<i>Do ye bring or fetch</i>
		Tráhigan éllor	<i>Let them bring or fetch</i>

*Optative and Subjunctive Mood.*

Cómo, Aunque, Oxalá.  
*When, God grant, would to God.*

Present Tense.

<i>Sing.</i>	{	Tráhiga	}	<i>When or would to God I do bring or fetch, &amp;c.</i>
		Tráhigas		
		Tráhiga		
<i>Plur.</i>	{	Trahigámos		
		Trahigáis		
		Tráhigan		

Preterimperfect Tense.

<i>Sing.</i>	{	Truxéra, truxéſſe, trahería	}	<i>When, or would to God I did bring or fetch, &amp;c.</i>
		Truxéras, truxéſſes, traherías		
		Truxéra, truxéſſe, trahería		
<i>Plur.</i>	{	Truxeramos. truxéſſemos, traheríamos		
		Truxéradeis, truxéſſedeis, traheriadeis		
		Truxéran, truxéſſen, traherían		

*The firſt and ſecond may be conjugated by Traxéra, and Traxéſſe.*

Preterperfect.

<i>Sing.</i>	{	Háya	}	Trahído,	{	<i>When, or would to God I have brought or fetched, &amp;c.</i>
		Háyas				
		Háya				
<i>Plur.</i>	{	Hayámos				
		Hayáis				
		Hyan				

First and Second Preterpluperfects.

<i>Sing.</i>	{ Huviéra, or huviéſſe Huviéras, or huviéſſes Huviéra, or huviéſſe	} Trahído,	{ When, or would to God had brought or fetcht, &c.
<i>Plur.</i>	{ Huviéramos, or huviéſſemos Huviéradeis, or huviéſſedeis Huviéran, or huviéſſen		

First Future.

<i>Sing.</i>	{ Traxére, or truxére Traxéres, or truxéres Traxére, or truxére	} When, or God grant I shall fetch or bring, &c.
<i>Plur.</i>	{ Traxéremos, or truxéremos Traxéredeis, or truxéredeis Traxéren, or truxéren.	

Second Future.

<i>Sing.</i>	{ Huviére, or havré Huviéres Huviére	} Trahído,	{ When, or God grant I may, or shall have brought or fetcht, c.
<i>Plur.</i>	{ Huviéremos Huviéredeis Huviéren		

Infinitive Mood,

Present.

Trahér, To bring, or fetch.

Preterperfect.

Havér trahído, To have brought, or fetch'd.

Future.

Havér, or esperar de trahér To bring, or fetch hereafter.



Gerund.

Trahiendo,

*Bringing, or fetching.*

Participle of the Preter Tense and Passive Voice.

Trahido

*Brought, or fetch'd, &c.*

The same manner of Conjugation is to be observed in all Verbs compounded of *Trabér*, as *Retrabér*, to draw back, &c.

*The Irregular Verb Sabér, To know.*

Indicative.

Present Tense.

Sing.	{	Yo sé,	<i>I know</i>
		Tu sabes,	<i>You know</i>
		El sabe,	<i>He knows</i>
Plur.	{	Sabemos,	<i>We know</i>
		Sabéis	<i>Ye know</i>
		Sáben,	<i>They know</i>

Preterimperfect.

Sing.	{	Sabía,	<i>I did know</i>
		Sabías,	<i>You did know</i>
		Sabía,	<i>He did know</i>
Plur.	{	Sabíamos,	<i>We did know</i>
		Sabíadeis	<i>Ye did know</i>
		Sabían,	<i>They did know</i>

First

### First Preterperfect.

<i>Sing.</i>	{	Súpe,	<i>I knew</i>
		Supiste,	<i>You knew</i>
		Súpo,	<i>He knew</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	{	Supimos,	<i>We knew</i>
		Supisteis	<i>Ye knew</i>
		Supieron,	<i>They knew</i>

### Second and third Preterperfects.

<i>Sing.</i>	{	He, or hùve sabido	<i>I have known</i>
		Has sabido,	<i>You have known</i>
		Ha sabido,	<i>He has known</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	{	Hémos sabido,	<i>We have known</i>
		Havéis sabido,	<i>Ye have known</i>
		Han sabido,	<i>They have known</i>

### Preterpluperfect.

<i>Sing.</i>	{	Havia	} Sabido,	{	<i>I had known</i>
		Havias			<i>You had known</i>
		Havía			<i>He had known</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	{	Havíamos			<i>We had known</i>
		Haviádeis			<i>Ye had known</i>
		Havían			<i>They had known</i>

### First Future.

<i>Sing.</i>	{	Sabré,	<i>I shall, or will know</i>
		Sabrás,	<i>You shall, or will know</i>
		Sabrá,	<i>He shall, or will know</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	{	Sabrémos,	<i>We shall, or will know</i>
		Sabréis,	<i>Ye shall, or will know</i>
		Sabrán,	<i>They shall, or will know</i>

### Second Future.

<i>Sing.</i>	{	He, or Téngo de saber,	<i>I am to know</i>
		Has de saber,	<i>You are to know</i>
		Ha de saber,	<i>He is to know</i>

<i>Plur.</i>	{	Hémos de sabér	<i>We are to know</i>
		Havéis de sabér	<i>Ye are to know</i>
		Han de sabér	<i>They are to know</i>

### Third Future.

Havré de sabér	<i>I shall be oblig'd to know</i>
----------------	-----------------------------------

### Fourth Future.

Havía de sabér	<i>I was to know</i>
----------------	----------------------

### Imperative Mood.

<i>Sing.</i>	{	Sábe tu	<i>Know you</i>
		Sépa el	<i>Let him know</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	{	Sepámos nosóttos	<i>Let us know</i>
		Sabéd vosóttos	<i>Know ye</i>
		Sépan ellos	<i>Let them know</i>

### *Subjunctive and Optative Mood.*

{ *Cómo, Aunque, Oxalá,*  
*When, Though, Would to God.*

### Present Tense.

<i>Sing.</i>	{	Sépa	}	<i>God grant that I may know.</i>
		Sépas		
		Sépa		
<i>Plur.</i>	{	Sepámos		
		Sepáis		
		Sépan		



**Preterimperfect.**

<i>Sing.</i>	{ Supiéra, supiéſſe, fabría Supiéras, supiéſſes, fabrias Supiéra, supiéſſe, fabría	} <i>When, or God grant I did know, &amp;c.</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	{ Supiéramos, supiéſſemos, fabríamos Supiéradeis, supiéſſedeis, fabriadeis Supiéran, supiéſſen, fabrian	

**Preterperfect.**

<i>Sing.</i>	{ Haya ſabido Hayas ſabido Haya ſabido	} <i>When, or God grant I have known, &amp;c.</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	{ Hayámos ſabido Hayáis ſabido Hayan ſabido	

**First and Second Preterpluperfect.**

<i>Sing.</i>	{ Huviéra, or huviéſſe Huviéras, or huviéſſes Huviéra, or huviéſſe	} Sabido, { <i>When, or would to God I had known, &amp;c.</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	{ Huviéramos, or huviéſſemos Huviéradeis, or huviéſſedeis Huviéran, or huviéſſen	

**First Future.**

<i>Sing.</i>	{ Supiére Supiéres Supiére	} <i>When, or God grant I ſhall know, &amp;c.</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	{ Supiéremos Supiéredeis Supiéren	

**Second Future.**

<i>Sing.</i>	{ Huviére, or havré Huviéres, Huviére	} Sabido { <i>When, or God grant I ſhall have known, &amp;c.</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	{ Huviéremos Huviéredeis Huviéren	

**Infinitive**

Infinitive Mood.

Present Tense.

Sabér *To know*

Preterperfect Tense.

Havér sabído *To have known*

Future Tense.

Havér, *or* esperar de sabér *To know hereafter*

Gerund.

Sabiendo *Knowing*

Participle of the Present Tense and Active Voice.

El que sabe *Knowing*

Participle of the Preter Tense and Passive Voice,

Sabído *Known*

*The Irregular Verb Tener, To have, or hold.*

Indicative Mood.

Present.

Sing. { Téngo  
          { Tiénes  
          { Tiéne

*I have, or hold  
You have, or h'ld  
He has, or holds*

<i>Plur.</i>	{	Tenémos	<i>We have, or hold</i>
		Tencís	<i>Ye have, or hold</i>
		Tíenen	<i>They have, or hold</i>

Preterimperfect.

<i>Sing.</i>	{	Tenia	}	<i>I did have, or hold, &amp;c.</i>
		Tenías		
		Tenia		
<i>Plur.</i>	{	Teníamos		
		Teníadeis		
		Tenían		

First Preterperfect.

<i>Sing.</i>	{	Túve	<i>I had, or held</i>
		Tuviste	<i>You had, or held</i>
		Tuvo	<i>He had, or held</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	{	Tuvimos	<i>We had, or held</i>
		Tuvisteis	<i>Ye had, or held</i>
		Tuviéron	<i>They had, or held</i>

Second and Third Preterperfect.

<i>Sing.</i>	{	He, or huvé tenido	<i>I have had</i>
		Has tenido	<i>You have had</i>
		Ha tenido	<i>He has had</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	{	Hémos tenido	<i>We have had</i>
		Havéis tenido	<i>Ye have had</i>
		Han tenido	<i>They have had</i>

Preterpluperfect.

<i>Sing.</i>	{	Havía	}	Tenido	{	<i>I had had</i>
		Havías				<i>You had had</i>
		Havía				<i>He had had</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	{	Havíamos				<i>We had had</i>
		Haviádeis				<i>Ye had had</i>
		Havían				<i>They had had</i>

First Future.

<i>Sing.</i>	{	Tendré terné, or tenré	<i>I shall, or will have</i>
		Tendrás ternás, or terás	<i>You shall, or will have</i>
		Tendrá terná, or tenra	<i>He shall, or will have</i>
			<i>Plur.</i>



Plur.	{	Tendremos ternémos, or tenrémos	<i>We shall, or will have</i>
		Tendréis ternéis, or tenréis	<i>Ye shall, or will have</i>
		Tendrán ternán, or tenrán	<i>They shall, or will have</i>

### Second Future.

Sing.	{	He de tener	<i>I am to have, or hold</i>
		Has de tener	<i>You are to have, or hold</i>
		Ha de tener	<i>He is to have, or hold</i>
Plur.	{	Hémos de tener	<i>We are to have, or hold</i>
		Havéis de tener	<i>Ye are to have, or hold</i>
		Han de tener	<i>They are to have, or hold</i>

### Third Future.

Havré de tener	<i>I shall be oblig'd to have or hold</i>
----------------	---

### Fourth Future.

Havía de tener	<i>I was to have</i>
----------------	----------------------

### Imperative Mood.

Sing.	{	Ten tu	<i>Do thou have, or hold thou</i>
		Tenga el	<i>Let him have, or hold</i>
Plur.	{	Tengámos nosótro	<i>Let us have, or hold</i>
		Tened vosótro	<i>Do ye have, or hold, or let ye hold</i>
		Tengan ellos	<i>Let them have, or hold</i>

### Optative and Subjunctive Mood.

Cómo, Oxalá, Aunque.

*When, God grant, Though.*

### Present Tense.

Sing.	{	Tenga	}	<i>When, or God grant I do have, or hold, &amp;c.</i>
		Tengas		
		Tenga		
Plur.	{	Tengámos		
		Tengáis		
		Tengan		

## Preterimperfect.

Sing.	{	Tuviéra, tuviéſſe, ternía, or tendría	} <i>When, or would to God I did have or hold, &amp;c.</i>
		Tuviéras, tuviéſſes, ternías, or tendrías	
Plur.	{	Tuviéra, tuviéſſe, ternía, or tendría	
		Tuviéramos, tuviéſſemos, terníamos, or tendríamos	
		Tuviéradeis, tuviéſſedeis, terníamos, or tendríadeis	
	{	Tuviéran, tuviéſſen, ternían, or tendrían	

## Preterperfect.

Sing.	{	Haya tenido	} <i>When, or God grant I have had, or held, &amp;c.</i>
		Hayas tenido	
Plur.	{	Haya tenido	
		Hayámos tenido	
		Hayáis tenido	
	{	Hayan tenido	

## First and Second Preterpluperfects.

Sing.	{	Huviéra, or huviéſſe	} Tenido, { <i>When, or would to God I had had, or held &amp;c.</i>
		Huviéras, or huviéſſes	
Plur.	{	Huviéra, or huviéſſe	
		Huviéramos, or huviéſſemos	
		Huviéradeis, or huviéſſedeis	
	{	Huviéran, or huviéſſen	

## First Future.

Sing.	{	Tuviére	} <i>When, or God grant I shall have or hold, &amp;c.</i>
		Tuviéres	
Plur.	{	Tuviére	
		Tuviéremos	
		Tuviéredes	
	{	Tuviéren	

## Second

Second Future.

Sing.	{	Huviére, <i>or</i> <i>havré</i>	}	Tenído,	{	<i>When, or God grant I shall have had or held, &amp;c.</i>
		Huviéres				
Plur.	{	Huviére	}			
		Huviéremos				
		Huviéredes				
		Huviéren				

Infinitive Mood.

Present Tense.

Tenér *To have or to hold.*

Preterperfect Tense.

Havér tenído *To have had or held*

Future Tense.

Havér de tenér *To be to have or hold*

Gerund.

Teniendo *Holding*

Participle of the Present Tense and Active Voice.

El que tiéne *Holding*

Participle of the Preter Tense and Passive Voice.

Tenído *Held*

Like this Verb simple are its Compounds in all points declined, thro' all Moods and Tenses, as

Mantenér, *to maintain*; Yo manténgo, *I maintain*, mantúve, *I maintained.*

Detenér, *to detain or stay*; Deténgo, *I detain*; detúve, *I detained.*



# 136 The RUDIMENTS of

Retenér, *to retain or with-hold*; Reténgo, *I retain*; retúve, *I retained*  
 Sosténér, *to sustain or uphold*; Sosténgo, *I sustain*; sostúve, *I sustained*

---

## The Irregular Verb Poder, To be able.

### Indicative Mood.

#### Present Tense.

Sing.	{	Puéo	<i>I can, or am able</i>
		Puedes	<i>You can, or are able</i>
		Puede	<i>He can, or is able</i>
Plur.	{	Podémos	<i>We can, or are able</i>
		Podéis	<i>Ye can, or are able</i>
		Pueden	<i>They can, or are able</i>

#### Preterimperfect.

Sing.	{	Podía	<i>I could, or was able</i>
		Podías	<i>You could, or was able</i>
		Podía	<i>He could, or was able</i>
Plur.	{	Podíamos	<i>We could, or were able</i>
		Podíades	<i>Ye could, or were able</i>
		Podían	<i>They could, or were able</i>

#### First Preterperfect.

Sing.	{	Púde	} <i>I could, or have been able, &amp;c.</i>
		Pudiste	
		Púdo	
Plur.	{	Pudimos	
		Pudisteis	
		Pudieron	

Second

Second and third Preterperfects.

Sing.	{	Hé, or huvé	}	Podido,	{	<i>I could, or have been able</i>
		Has				<i>You could, or have been able</i>
		Ha				<i>He could, or has been able</i>
Plur.	{	Hémos, or				<i>We could, or have been able</i>
		havémos				
		Havéis				<i>Ye could, or have been able</i>
		Han				<i>They could, or have been able</i>

Preterpluperfect.

Sing.	{	Havía	}	Podido,	{	<i>I had been able, &amp;c.</i>
		Havías				
		Havía				
Plur.	{	Havíamos				
		Havíadeis				
		Havían				

First Future.

Sing.	{	Podré	}		{	<i>I shall, or will be able, &amp;c.</i>
		Podrás				
		Podrá				
Plur.	{	Podrémos				
		Podréis				
		Podrán				

Second Future.

Sing.	{	He, or téngo de poder	}		{	<i>I must, or will be able, &amp;c.</i>
		Has de poder				
		Ha de poder				
Plur.	{	Hémos, or havémos de poder				
		Havéis de poder				
		Han de poder				

Third Future.

Havré de poder

*I shall be obliged to be able*

Fourth Future.

Havía de poder

*I was to be able*

Though

Though it seems improper for this Word to have a second, third, and fourth Futures of the Indicative Mood, or any Imperative Mood, and most Grammarians will allow it neither, yet they are frequently and properly used. As to the second Future, it is very usual, and when one says, he cannot do such a thing, to answer, *Has de poder*, You shall be able ; by way of compelling slothful persons, or such as may improve by often trying to do that which they cannot do at present. The same is to be said of the Imperative, which is in the nature of the second future, being compulsive ; as, if one say, *No podemos hacer esto*, We cannot do this ; and another answers, *Pués podemos*, Then let us be able ; that is, let us use our Endeavours, that we may perform that which we think we cannot do. Therefore we will proceed to the

### Imperative Mood.

Sing.	{	Puede tu	Do you be able
		Pueda el	Let him be able
Plur.	{	Podamos nosotros	Let us be able
		Podéd vosotros	Do ye be able
		Puedan ellos	Let them be able

### *Subjunctive and Optative Mood, with the Signs,*

{ *Cómo, Aunque, Oxalá,*  
 { *When, Though, Would to God.*

### Present Tense.

Sing.	{	Pueda	} <i>When, or God grant I can, or</i>
		Puedas	
		Pueda	
Plur.	{	Podamos	
		Podáis	
		Puedan	

Preter-



# Preterimperfect Tense.

Sing.	{	Pudiéra, pudiéſſe, podría	}	<i>When, or would to God I could or might be able, &amp;c.</i>
		Pudiéras, pudiéſſes, podrías		
		Pudiéra, pudiéſſe, podría		
Plur.	{	Pudiéramos, pudiéſſemos, podríamos		
		Pudiéradeis, pudiéſſedeis, podriadeis		
		Pudiéran, pudiéſſen, podrían		

# Preterperfect.

Sing.	{	Háya	}	Podido,	{	<i>When, or would to God, &amp;c. I have been able, &amp;c.</i>
		Háyas				
		Háya				
Plur.	{	Hayámos				
		Hayáis				
		Hyan				

# First and Second Preterpluperfects.

Sing.	{	Huviéra, or huviéſſe	}	Podido,	{	<i>When, or would to God I had been able, &amp;c.</i>
		Huviéras, or huviéſſes				
		Huviéra, or huviéſſe				
Plur.	{	Huviéramos, or huviéſſemos				
		Huviéradeis, or huviéſſedeis				
		Huviéran, or huviéſſen				

# First Future.

Sing.	{	Pudiére	}	<i>When, or God grant I ſhall, or may be able, &amp;c.</i>
		Pudiéres		
		Pudiére		
Plur.	{	Pudiéremos		
		Pudiéredeis		
		Pudiéren		

# Second Future.

Sing.	{	Huviére, or havré	}	Podido,	{	<i>When, or God grant I may, or ſhall have been able, &amp;c.</i>
		Huviéres				
		Huviére				
Plur.	{	Huviéremos				
		Huviéredeis				
		Huviéren				

# Infinitive Mood.

## Present Tense.

Podér                                      *To be able*

## Preterperfect Tense.

Havér podido                                      *To have been able*

## Gerund.

Pudiendo,                                      *Being able, &c.*

# *The Irregular Verb Querér, To will, or love.*

## Indicative Mood.

### Present Tense.

Sing.	{	Yo quiero	<i>I will, or love</i>
		Tu quieres	<i>You will, or love</i>
		El quiere	<i>He wills, or loves</i>
Plur.	{	Nosotros queremos	<i>We will, or love</i>
		Vosotros queréis	<i>Ye will, or love</i>
		Ellos quieren	<i>They will, or love</i>

### Preterimperfect.

Sing.	{	Quería,	<i>I did will, or love</i>
		Querías	<i>You did will, or love</i>
		Quería	<i>He did will, or love</i>
Plur.	{	Queríamos	<i>We did will, or love</i>
		Queríades	<i>Ye did will, or love</i>
		Querían	<i>They did will, or love.</i>

### First Preterperfect.

Sing.	{	Quise	{	<i>I willed, or loved</i>
		Quisiste		<i>You willed, or loved</i>
		Quiso		<i>He willed, or loved</i>
Plur.	{	Quisimos	{	<i>We willed, or loved</i>
		Quisisteis		<i>Ye willed, or loved</i>
		Quisieron		<i>They willed, or loved</i>

### Second and Third Preterperfect.

Sing.	{	He, or hube	{	Querido,	{	<i>I have willed, or loved, &amp;c.</i>
		Has				
		Ha				
Plur.	{	Hemos, or havemos				
		Havéis				
		Han				

### Preterpluperfect.

Sing.	{	Havía	{	Querido,	{	<i>I had willed, or loved, &amp;c.</i>
		Havías				
		Havía				
Plur.	{	Haviámos				
		Haviádeis				
		Havian				

### First Future.

Sing.	{	Querré	{	<i>I will, or shall will, or love, &amp;c.</i>
		Querrás		
		Querrá		
Plur.	{	Querrémos		
		Querréis		
		Querrán		

### Second Future.

Sing.	{	He, or tengo de querer	{	<i>I am to, or must will, or love, &amp;c.</i>
		Has de querer		
		Ha de querer		
Plur.	{	Hemos, or havemos de querer		
		Havéis de querer		
		Han de querer		

Third



## Third Future.

Havré de querér

*I shall be obliged to love*

## Fourth Future.

Havía de querér

*I had, or I was to love*

## Imperative Mood.

Sing. { Quiére tu  
 Quiera el  
 Plur. { Querámos nosótro  
 Queréd vosótro  
 Quieran éllor

*Do you will, or love*  
*Let him will, or love*  
*Let us will, or love*  
*Do ye will, or love*  
*Let them will, or love*

## Optative and Subjunctive Mood.

Cómo, Aunque, Oxalá,  
*When, Though, would to God,*

## Present Tense.

Sing. { Quiéra  
 Quiéras  
 Quiéra  
 Plur. { Querámos  
 Queráis  
 Quieran

*When, or God grant I will*  
*or love, &c.*

## Three Preterimperfect Tenses.

Sing. { Quisiéra, quisiése, querría  
 Quisiéras, quisiésse, querrías  
 Quisiéra, quisiése, querría  
 Plur. { Quisiéramos, quisiéssomos, querríamos  
 Quisiéradeis, quisiéssedeis, querríadeis  
 Quisiéran, quisiéssen, querrían

*When, or God*  
*grant I would*  
*or did love,*  
*&c.*

Preter-

## Preterperfect Tense.

Sing.	{	Háya	}	Querido,	{	<i>When, or God grant I have will'd, or lov'd, &amp;c.</i>	
		Háyas					
		Háya					
Plur.		Hayámos					
		Hayáis					
		Háyan					

## First and Second Preterpluperfect.

Sing.	{	Huviéra, or huviéſſe	}	Querido	{	When, or
		Huviéras, or huviéſſes				would
		Huviéra, or huviéſſe				to God
Plur.	{	Huviéramos, or huviéſſemos				I had
		Huviéradeis, or huviéſſedeis				will'd, or
		Huviéran, or huviéſſen				lov'd, &c.

## First Future.

Sing.	{	Quiſiére	}	<i>When, or God grant I ſhall will, or love, &amp;c.</i>
		Quiſiéres		
		Quiſiére		
Plur.	{	Quiſiéreſmos		
		Quiſiéredeis		
		Quiſiéren		

## Second Future.

Sing.	{	Huviére, or havré	}	Querido,	{	<i>When, or God grant I shall be willing, or love, &amp;c.</i>
		Huviéres				
		Huviére				
Plur.	{	Huviéremos	}			
		Huviéredeis				
		Huviéren				

## Infinitive Mood.

### Present Tense.

Querér

*To wil', or love*

Preter-

Preterperfect.

Havér querido

*To have will'd, or lov'd*

Gerund.

Queriendo

*Loving*

Participle.

Querido

*Will'd, or lov'd, &c.*

This Verb may be declined through all Moods and Tenses with the word *Mas* added to it, which with it sometimes signifies *rather*, and sometimes *more*, as *Mas quiéro callár que bablár mal*, I had rather be silent than speak ill; or *Mas quiéro a Pédro que a Juán*, I love *Peter* more, or better than *John*.

*The Irregular Verb Ponér, To put, or place.*

Indicative Mood.

Present Tense.

Sing.	{	Yo pongo	}	<i>I put, or place, &amp;c.</i>
		Tu pones		
		El pone		
Plur.	{	Ponemos		
		Poneis		
		Ponen		

Preterimperfect.

Sing.	{	Ponía	<i>I did put</i>
		Ponías	<i>You did put</i>
		Ponía	<i>He did put</i>

*Plur.*



Plur.	{	Poníamos	<i>We did put</i>
		Poníadeis	<i>Ye did put</i>
		Ponían	<i>They did put</i>

### First Preterperfect.

Sing.	{	Púse	}	<i>I have put, &amp;c.</i>
		Puiste		
		Púso		
Plur.	{	Pusimos		
		Pusisteis		
		Pusieron		

### Second Preterperfect.

Sing.	He, or hube	Puesto,	<i>I have put, &amp;c.</i>
-------	-------------	---------	----------------------------

### Preterpluperfect.

Sing.	Havía	Puesto,	<i>I had put, &amp;c.</i>
-------	-------	---------	---------------------------

### First Future.

Sing.	Pondré, or poneré	<i>I shall, or will put, &amp;c.</i>
-------	-------------------	--------------------------------------

### Second Future.

Sing.	He, or Téngo de poner	<i>I am to, or must put, &amp;c.</i>
-------	-----------------------	--------------------------------------

### Third Future.

Havré de poner	<i>I shall be oblig'd to put</i>
Havía de poner	<i>I had, or I was to put</i>

### Imperative Mood.

Sing.	{	Pon tu	<i>Do you put, or put thou</i>
		Ponga el	<i>Let him put</i>
Plur.	{	Pongámos nosótro	<i>Let us put</i>
		Poned vosotros	<i>Do ye put, or let ye put</i>
		Pongan ellos	<i>Let them put</i>

## Subjunctive *and* Optative Mood.

{ *Cómo, Aunque, Oxalá,*  
*When, Though, Would to God.*

### Present Tense.

<i>Sing.</i>	{	Pónza	} <i>When, or God grant I do put, &amp;c.</i>
		Póngas	
		Pónza	
		Pongámos	
<i>Plur.</i>	{	Pongáis	
		Póngan	

### Preterimperfect.

<i>Sing.</i>	{	Pusiéra, pusiésse, or pornia, pon-	}	<i>When, or would to God I did put, &amp;c.</i>
		dria		
		Pusiéras, pusiésse, or pornias,		
<i>Plur.</i>	{	pondrias	}	
		Pusiéra, pusiésse, or pornia, pon-		
		dria		
		Pusiéramos, pusiésse, or por-		
<i>Plur.</i>	{	niámos, pondriámos	}	
		Pusiéradeis, pusiésse, or por-		
		niadeis, pondriadeis		
		Pusiéran, pusiésse, or pornian,		
<i>Plur.</i>	{	pondrian	}	

### Preterperfect.

Sing.	{ Háya Háyas Háya	}	Puesto,	{	<i>When, or God grant I have put,</i>
Plur.	{ Hayámos Hayáis Háyan				

First and Second Preterpluperfects.

Sing.	{	Huviéra, or huviéſſe	}	Puéſto,	{	<i>When, or would to God I had put, &amp;c.</i>
		Huviéras, or huviéſſes				
		Huviéra, or huviéſſe				
Plur.	{	Huviéramos, or huviéſſemos	}			
		Huviéradeis, or huviéſſedeis				
		Huviéran, or huviéſſen				

First Future.

Sing.	{	Puſiére	}	<i>When, or God grant I ſhall put; &amp;c.</i>
		Puſiéres		
		Puſiére		
Plur.	{	Puſiéremos		
		Puſiéredeis		
		Puſiéren		

Second Future.

Sing.	{	Huviére, or havré	}	Puéſto,	{	<i>When, or God grant I ſhall have put, &amp;c.</i>				
		Huviéres								
		Huviére								
Plur.	{	Huviéremos					}			
		Huviéredeis								
		Huviéren								

Infinitive Mood.

Present Tense.

Poner, *To put*

Preterperfect Tense.

Haver puéſto, *To have put*

Gerund.

Poniéndo, *Putting*



## Participle Passive.

Puesto

Put, &amp;c.

After this manner are declined in all respects, *Componér*, to compose, *yo compóngo*, I compose, *compúse*, I have composed; *Disponér*, to dispose, *disponóngo*, I dispose, *dispúse*, I have disposed; *Antepónér*, to set before, *antepóngo*, I set before, *antepúse*, I have set before; *Propónér*, to propose, *propóngo*, I propose, *propúse*, I proposed; and, if there be any other Verbs derived by Composition from *Ponér*.

---

*The Irregular Verb Hacér, To do, or make.*

## Indicative Mood.

## Present Tense.

Sing.	{	Yo hágo	{	<i>I do or make</i>
		Tu háces		<i>You do or make</i>
		El háce		<i>He does or makes</i>
Plur.	{	Hacemos	{	<i>We do or make</i>
		Hacéis		<i>Ye do or make</i>
		Hácen		<i>They do or make</i>

## Preterimperfect.

Sing.	{	Hacía	}	<i>I did or made, &amp;c.</i>
		Hacías		
		Hacía		
Plur.	{	Hacíamos		
		Hacíades, or hacíais		
		Hacían		

## First Preterperfect.

Sing.	{	Hice	{	<i>I have made, &amp;c.</i>
		Hiciste		
		Hizo		
		I		Plur.

*Plur.* { Hicimos  
Hicisteis  
Hicieron } *We have made, &c.*

### Second Preterperfect.

Sing.	{	He, or húve	}	Hécho,	{	<i>I have done, or made, &amp;c.</i>
	{	Has				
	{	Ha				
	{	Hémos, or havémos				
Plur.	{	Havéis				
	{	Han				

### Preterpluperfect.

Sing.	{	Havía	}	Hécho,	{	<i>I had done or made, &amp;c.</i>
		Havías				
		Havía				
		Havíamos				
Plur.	{	Haviádeis				
		Havían				

### First Future.

<i>Sing.</i>	{ Haré Harás Hará	} <i>I shall, or will do, or make,     &amp;c.</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	Harémos	
	Haréis	
	Harán	

## Second Future.

Sing.	{	He, or téngo de hacér	}	<i>I am to, or must do, or make, &amp;c.</i>
	{	Has de hacér		
	{	Ha de hacér		
	{	Hémos de hacér		
Plur.	{	Havéys de hacér		
	{	Han de hacér		

### Third Future.

**Havré de hacér,**

*I shall be oblig'd to do*

Fourth Future.

Havla de hacer

*I had, or I was to do*

Imperative Mood,

Sing.	{	Ház, or háce tu	<i>Do or make thou, or do thou</i>
		Hága el	<i>Let him do or make</i>
Plur.	{	Hagámos nosótro	<i>Let us do or make</i>
		Hacéd vosótro	<i>Do ye or make ye, let ye do</i>
		Hágan éllos	<i>Let them do or make</i>

Subjunctive *and* Optative Mood.

Cómo, Aunque, Oxalá.

*When, Though, Would to God.*

Present Tense.

Sing.	{	Hága	}	<i>When, or God grant I do or make, &amp;c.</i>
		Hágas		
		Hága		
Plur.	{	Hagámos		
		Hegáis		
		Hágan		

Preterimperfect.

Sing.	{	Hiciéra, hiciése, haría	}	<i>When, or would to God I did do or make, &amp;c.</i>
		Hiciéras, hiciéses, harías		
		Hiciéra, hiciése, haría		
Plur.	{	Hiciéramos, hiciésemos, haríamos		
		Hiciéradeis, hiciésedeis, haríadeis		
		Hiciéran, hiciésen, harían		

Preter-



Preterperfect.

Sing.	{	Háya hécho	}	<i>When, or God grant I have made, or done, &amp;c.</i>
		Háyas hécho		
		Háya hécho		
Plur.	{	Hayámos hecho		
		Hayáis hécho		
		Hayán hécho		

First and Second Preterpluperfects.

Sing.	{	Huviéra, or huviéſſe	}	Hécho,	{	<i>When, or would to God I had done or made, &amp;c.</i>
		Huviéras, or huviéſſes				
		Huviéra, or huviéſſe				
Plur.	{	Huviéramos, or huviéſſemos				
		Huviéradeis, or huviéſſedeis				
		Huviéran, or huviéſſen				

First Future.

Sing.	{	Hiciére	}	<i>When, or God grant I ſhall or will do or make, &amp;c.</i>
		Hiciéres		
		Hiciére		
Plur.	{	Hiciéremos		
		Hiciéredeis		
		Hiciéren		

Second Future.

Sing.	{	Huviére, or havré	}	Hécho,	{	<i>When, or God grant I ſhall have done or made, &amp;c.</i>
		Huviéres				
		Huviére				
Plur.	{	Huviéremos				
		Huviéredeis				
		Huviéren				

Infinitive Mood.

Present Tenſe.

Hacer,

*To do or make.*

### Preterperfect Tense.

Havér hécho

*To have done or made*

### Future Tense.

Havér, or esperár de hacér

*To make or do hereafter*

### Gerund.

Haciendo

*Doing or making*

### Participle Active of the Preter Tense.

Hécho

*Made or done, &c.*

In the same manner are declined all the Verbs proceeding by composition from *Hacér*, as *Desahacer*, to undo, *Rehacer*, to make again, *Contrahacer*, to counterfeit,

## *The Irregular Verb, Cabér, To be contained.*

### Indicative Mood.

#### Present Tense.

Sing.	{	Yo quépo
		Tu cábes
		El cábe
Plur.	{	Cabémcs
		Cabéis
		Cáben

<i>I am contained</i>
<i>You are contained</i>
<i>He is contained</i>
<i>We are contained</i>
<i>Ye are contained</i>
<i>They are contained</i>

Preter-

# Preterimperfect.

Sing.	{	Cabía		<i>I was contained</i>
		Cabías		<i>You was contained</i>
		Cabía		<i>He was contained</i>
Plur.	{	Cabíamos		<i>We were contained</i>
		Cabíades		<i>Ye were contained</i>
		Cabían		<i>They were contained</i>

# First Preterperfect.

Sing.	{	Cúpe		<i>I have been contained</i>
		Cupiste		<i>You have been contained</i>
		Cupo		<i>He has been contained</i>
Plur.	{	Cupimos		<i>We have been contained</i>
		Cupisteis		<i>Ye have been contained</i>
		Cupieron		<i>They have been contained</i>

# Second and Third Preterperfects.

Sing.	{	He, or hube cabido		<i>I have been contained</i>
		Has cabido		<i>You have been contained</i>
		Ha cabido		<i>He has been contained</i>
Plur.	{	Hemos cabido		<i>We have been contained</i>
		Havéis cabido		<i>Ye have been contained</i>
		Han cabido		<i>They have been contained</i>

# Preterpluperfect.

Sing.	{	Havía		Cabido,	{	<i>I had been contained</i>
		Havías				<i>You had been contained</i>
		Havía				<i>He had been contained</i>
Plur.	{	Haviámos				<i>We had been contained</i>
		Havíades				<i>Ye had been contained</i>
		Havían				<i>They had been contained</i>

# First Future.

Plur.	{	Cabré		<i>I shall or will be contained</i>
		Cabrás		<i>You shall or will be contained</i>
		Cabrá		<i>He shall or will be contained</i>
Sing.	{	Cabrémos		<i>We shall or will be contained</i>
		Cabréis		<i>Ye shall or will be contained</i>
		Cabrán		<i>They shall or will be contained</i>

Second



## Second Future.

<i>Sing.</i>	{ He, or ténço de cabér Has de cabér Ha de cabér	} <i>I am to, or must be contained, &amp;c.</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	{ Hémos de cabér Havéis de cabér Han de cabér	

The Third and Fourth as in the other Verbs.

## Imperative Mood.

<i>Sing.</i>	{ Cábe tu Quépa el	<i>Be you contained Let him be contained</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	{ Quepámos nosótro Cabéd vosótro Quépan ellos	<i>Let us be contained Be ye contained Let them be contained</i>

Subjunctive *and* Optative Mood.

{ *Cómo, Oxalá, Aunqué.*  
*When, God grant, Though.*

## Present Tense.

<i>Sing.</i>	{ Quépa Quépas Quépa	} <i>When, or God grant I am contained, &amp;c.</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	{ Quepámos Quepáis Quépan	

Preter-

# Preterimperfect.

<i>Sing.</i>	{	Cupiéra, cupiéſſe, cabría	}	<i>When, or would to God I was contained, &amp;c.</i>
		Cupiéras, cupiéſſes, cabrias		
		Cupiéra, cupiéſſe, cabría		
<i>Plur.</i>	{	Cupiéramos, cupiéſſemos, cabríamos		
		Cupiéradeis, cupiéſſedeis, cabríadeis		
		Cupiéran, cupiéſſen, cabrían		

# Preterperfect.

<i>Sing.</i>	{	Háya cabído	}	<i>When, or God grant I have been contained, &amp;c.</i>
		Háyas cabído		
		Háya cabído		
<i>Plur.</i>	{	Háyamos cabído		
		Háyais cabído		
		Háyan cabído		

# First and Second Preterpluperfects.

<i>Sing.</i>	{	Huviéra, or huviéſſe	}	<i>Cabído, { When, or would to God I had been contained, &amp;c.</i>
		Huviéras, or huviéſſes		
		Huviéra, or huviéſſe		
<i>Plur.</i>	{	Huviéramos, or huviéſſemos		
		Huviéradeis, or huviéſſedeis		
		Huviéran, or huviéſſen		

# First Future.

<i>Sing.</i>	{	Cupiére	}	<i>When, or God grant I ſhall, or will be contained, &amp;c.</i>
		Cupiéres		
		Cupiére		
<i>Plur.</i>	{	Cupiéremos		
		Cupiéredeis		
		Cupiéren		

# Second Future.

<i>Sing.</i>	{	Huviére, or havré	}	<i>Cabído { When, or God grant I may or ſhall be contained hereafter, &amp;c.</i>
		Huviéres,		
		Huviére		
<i>Plur.</i>	{	Huviéremos		
		Huviéredeis		
		Huviéren		

Infinitive

## Infinitive Mood.

### Present.

**Cabér**

*To be contained.*

### Preterperfect.

**Havér cabído**

*To have been contained.*

### Gerund.

**Cabiéndo**

*Being contained.*

### Participle.

**Cabído**

*Contained.*

## *The Irregular Verb, Vér, To see.*

### Indicative Mood.

#### Present Tense.

<i>Sing.</i>	{	Yo véo	<i>I see</i>
		Tu ves	<i>You see</i>
		El ve	<i>He sees</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	{	Vémos	<i>We see</i>
		Véis	<i>Ye see</i>
		Ven	<i>They see</i>

#### Preterimperfect.

<i>Sing.</i>	{	Vía, or veía	<i>I did see</i>
		Vías	<i>You did see</i>
		Vía	<i>He did see</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	{	Víamos	<i>We did see</i>
		Víadeis	<i>Ye did see</i>
		Vían	<i>They did see</i>

First



## First Preterperfect.

Sing.	{	Vi, or vide	<i>I saw</i>
		Viste	<i>You saw</i>
		Vio	<i>He saw</i>
Plur.	{	Vimos	<i>We saw</i>
		Visteis	<i>Ye saw</i>
		Viéron	<i>They saw</i>

## Second and Third Preterperfects.

Sing.	{	He, or hube visto	<i>I have seen</i>
		Has visto	<i>You have seen</i>
		Ha visto	<i>He has seen</i>
Plur.	{	Hemos visto	<i>We have seen</i>
		Havéis visto	<i>Ye have seen</i>
		Han visto	<i>They have seen</i>

## Preterpluperfect.

Sing.	{	Havía	} Visto,	{	<i>I had seen</i>
		Havías			<i>You had seen</i>
		Havía			<i>He had seen</i>
Plur.	{	Havíamos			<i>We had seen</i>
		Haviádeis			<i>Ye had seen</i>
		Havían			<i>They had seen</i>

## First Future.

Sing.	{	Veré	<i>I shall or will see</i>
		Verás	<i>You shall or will see</i>
		Verá	<i>He shall or will see</i>
Plur.	{	Verémos	<i>We shall or will see</i>
		Veréis	<i>Ye shall or will see</i>
		Verán	<i>They shall or will see</i>

## Second Future.

Sing.	{	He, or tengo de vér	<i>I am to or must see</i>
		Has de vér	<i>You are to or must see</i>
		Ha de vér	<i>He is to or must see</i>
Plur.	{	Hemos de vér	<i>We are to or must see</i>
		Havéis de vér	<i>Ye are to or must see</i>
		Han de vér	<i>They are to or must see</i>

The Third and Fourth as in the other Verbs.

Imperative

**Imperative Mood.**

<i>Sing.</i>	{	<i>Vée, or vé tu</i>	<i>Do thou see, or see thou</i>
		<i>Véa el</i>	<i>Let him see</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	{	<i>Veámos nosótro</i>	<i>Let us see</i>
		<i>Ved vosótro</i>	<i>Do ye see, or let ye see</i>
		<i>Véan éllor</i>	<i>Let them see</i>

The Subjunctive, the Optative, and the Infinitive Moods, altogether as in the other Verbs before, as the Present Tense of the two first Moods *Véa*, the Preterimperfect, *Viéra, vería, viéſſe*; the Preterperfect, *Haya víſto*, the Preterpluperfect, *Huviera, or buviéſſe víſto*; the Future, *Viére*. The Infinitive, *Vér*, Participle, *Víſto*.

---

*The Irregular Verb Caér, To fall.***Indicative Mood.****Present Tense.**

<i>Sing.</i>	{	<i>Cáigo</i>	<i>I fall</i>
		<i>Cáes</i>	<i>Thou falleſt</i>
		<i>Cáe</i>	<i>He falls</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	{	<i>Caémos</i>	<i>We fall</i>
		<i>Caéis</i>	<i>Ye fall</i>
		<i>Cáen</i>	<i>They fall</i>

**Preterimperfect.**

*Caía, caías, &c.*

**First Preterperfect.**

*Cai, caíſte, &c.*

**Second**

## Second Preterperfect.

He caído, Has caído, &c.

And so of the other Tenses, like the regular Verbs.

## Imperative Mood.

Sing.	{	Cae	Do you fall, or fall thou
		Cáiga	Let him fall
Plur.	{	Caigámos	Let us fall
		Caed	Do ye fall, or let ye fall
		Cáigan	Let them fall

## Infinitive Mood.

### Present Tense.

Caér

*To fall*

### Gerund.

Cayéndo

*Falling*

The Verb *Entendér*, to understand, in the Present Tense of the Indicative Mood makes *Entiéndo*; Preterperfect, *Entendí*.

## *Of the Verbs in Cér.*

THE following Verbs ending in *cer*, are generally spelt without an *s*, though it were more proper to write them with it before the *c*, which would render them all regular, and more answerable to the *Latin*, from which many of them are derived; but since we generally find them otherwise, it is proper to note them down here.

*Infinitive.*



<i>Infinitive.</i>	<i>Indicative.</i>	
	<i>Present Tense.</i>	<i>Preterperfect.</i>
Adolecér, <i>to grow sick</i>	Adoiésco	Adolecí
Agradecér, <i>to thank</i>	Agradésco	Agradecí
Amortecér, <i>to dye away</i>	Amortésco	Amortecí
Desfallecér, <i>to faint</i>	Desfallésco	Desfallecí
Apetecér, <i>to desire</i>	Apetésco	Apetecí
Crecér, <i>to grow</i>	Crésco	Crecí
Encallecér, <i>to wax hard as a Corn</i>	Encallésco	Encallecí
Encarecér, <i>to magnify</i>	Encarésco	Encarecí
Establecér, <i>to establish</i>	Establésco	Establecí
Fenecér, <i>to finish</i>	Feiésco	Fenecí
Pacér, <i>to feed</i>	Pásco	Pací
Perecér, <i>to perish</i>	Perésco	Perecí
Compadecér, <i>to have Compassion</i>	Compadésco	Compadecí
Conocér, <i>to know</i>	Conóscó	Conocí
Padecér, <i>to suffer</i>	Padésco	Padecí
Ofrecér, <i>to offer</i>	Ofrésco	Ofrecí
Guarnecér, <i>to garnish</i>	Guarnésco	Guarnecí
Parecér, <i>to appear</i>	Parésco	Parecí
Nacér, <i>to be born</i>	Náscó	Nací
Enflaquecér, <i>to grow lean</i>	Enflaquésco	Enflaquecí
Enriquecér, <i>to enrich</i>	Enriquésco	Enriquecí
Empobrecér, <i>to grow poor</i>	Empobrésco	Empobrecí
Endurecér, <i>to grow hard</i>	Enduréscó	Endurecí
Fallecér, <i>to fail or dye</i>	Fallésco	Fallecí
Engrandecér, <i>to magnify</i>	Engrandésco	Engrandecí
Entristecér, <i>to grow melancholy</i>	Entristéscó	Entristecí
Ennoblecér, <i>to ennoble</i>	Ennoblésco	Ennoblecí
Floreceér, <i>to flourish</i>	Florésco	Florecí
Fortalecér, <i>to strengthen</i>	Fortalésco	Fortalecí
Favorecér, <i>to favour</i>	Favorésco	Favorecí
Obedecér, <i>to obey</i>	Obedésco	Obedecí
Desvanecér, <i>to make vain</i>	Desvanéscó	Desvanecí
Ensoberbecér, <i>to grow proud</i>	Ensoberbéscó	Ensoberbecí
Emmudecér, <i>to grow dumb</i>	Emmudésco	Emmudecí
Establecér, <i>to establish</i>	Establésco	Establecí
Merecér, <i>to merit.</i>	Merésco	Merecí

Except from this general Rule, *Vencér*, to overcome, *Vénzo*, *Vencí*; which shows what was said above, that they might more properly all be writ with an *s* in the infinitive Mood, and present Tense of the indicative Mood, as *Pascér*, from the Latin *Páscere*; *conoscér*, from the Latin *cognóscere*,  
and

and so of others ; but custom has prevailed to write them as above, and there is no contending against it ; but *Vencér*, cannot admit of the *j*, being derived from the *Latin vincere*, and therefore keeps on without an *j* in all Moods and Tenses.

---

*Of the Verbs in gér.*

THE following Verbs which have their Infinitive in *gér*, make the Present Tense of the Indicative Mood, by changing *g* into *j* ; the same in the third Singular, and the first and third Plural of the Imperative Mood, and through all persons, and both numbers of the Present Tense of the Optative, and the Subjunctive Moods : That is when in the *ultima*, or last syllable there is an *a* or *o*.

<i>Infinitive.</i>	<i>Indicative.</i>	
	<i>Present Tense.</i>	<i>Preterperfect.</i>
Encogér, <i>to shrink,</i>	Encójo,	Encogí.
Recogér, <i>to gather,</i>	Recójo,	Recogí.
Acogér, <i>to entertain,</i>	Acojo,	Acogí.
Escogér, <i>to choose,</i>	Escójo,	Escogí.
Cogér, <i>to catch,</i>	Cójo,	Cogí.

In other Moods and Tenses, like the Regulars, except the Tenses before mentioned.

---

*Of the Verbs in ér.*

THE following Verbs in *ér* make the Present Tense of the Indicative Mood by adding *i* in the last syllable but one of the Infinitive, and

the same in the second and third Persons Singular, and the third Plural of the Imperative Mood, and throughout the Present Tense of the Optative and the Subjunctive Moods.

<i>Infinitive.</i>	<i>Indicative,</i>	
	<i>Present Tense.</i>	<i>Preterperfect.</i>
Defendér, <i>to defend,</i>	Defiéndo,	Defendí.
Hendér, <i>to cleave asunder,</i>	Hiéndo,	Hendí.
Cernér, <i>to sift,</i>	Ciérno,	Cerní.
Entendér, <i>to understand,</i>	Entiéndo,	Entendí.
Héder, <i>to sink,</i>	Hiédo,	Hedí.

The next underneath form the Present Tense of the Indicative, by turning *o* in the last Syllable but one of the Infinitive into *ue*; and the same in the second and third Person Singular, and the third Plural of the Imperative Mood, and throughout the Present Tense of the Optative and Subjunctive.

<i>Infinitive,</i>	<i>Indicative,</i>	
	<i>Present.</i>	<i>Preterperfect.</i>
Volvér, <i>to turn,</i>	Vuélvo,	Volví.
Solér, <i>to be wont,</i>	Suélo,	Solí.
Cozér, <i>to boil,</i>	Cuézo,	Cozí.
Dolér, <i>to grieve,</i>	Duélo,	Dolí.
Olér, <i>to smell,</i>	Huélo,	Olí.

The same in all Verbs deriv'd from any of them; as *Revolvér*, to stir about; *Condolér*, to suffer with, &c.

The next are vary'd as follows.

<i>Infinitive.</i>	<i>Indicative.</i>	
	<i>Present Tense.</i>	<i>Preterperfect.</i>
Caér, <i>to fall.</i>	Caigo,	Caí.
Roér, <i>to gnaw,</i>	Roigo,	Roí.
Valér, <i>to be worth,</i>	Válgo,	Valí.



# Of Verbs Passive of the Second Conjugation.

THEY are formed and conjugated in the same manner as those of the first Conjugation ; as *ver*, to see is made passive, thus :

Present. Indicative.		Imperfect.	Perfect.	
Sing.	Sói visto	I am seen, &c.	Fui, or he sido visto, &c.	I have been seen.
	éres visto			
	es visto			
Plur.	Somos vistos	I was seen, &c.	And so the rest of the Tenses.	
	Sóis vistos			
	Son vistos			

## Of Verbs Reciprocal.

These Verbs, and all terminated in *erse*, are likewise conjugated as those of the first Conjugation ; as

*Perderse*, To lose one's self, to be lost.

Present.		Indicative.		Perfect.	
		Imperfect.			
Si.	Me piérdo	I lose myself, &c.	Me perdía	I was losing myself	I lost myself, &c.
	Te pierdes				
	Se piérde				
Pl.	Nos perdémos		Nos perdíamos		
	Os perdéis				
	Se piéren				

and so of the other Tenses.

The Imperative thus :

Sing.	Piérdete	} Lose yourself.
	Piérdese	
Plur.	Perdámosenos	
	Perded os	
	Piérdanse	

*Note, That the Persons are often doubled in the Conjugation of those Verbs; as, Yo me pierdo, tu te pierdes, el se pierde, &c. or thus, Pierdome, Pierdeste, Perdiese, &c. by putting the Pronoun after the Verb.*

### *Of Verbs Impersonals.*

The Impersonals of this Conjugation are,

**Havér,**                      *To be, as in what concerns a Place, &c.*

#### **Indicative.**

##### **Present Tense.**

**Hái, or no háy**                      *There is, or there is not.*

##### **Imperfect.**

**Havía,**                      *There was.*

##### **First Preterperfect.**

**Húvo,**                      *There was, or there has been.*

##### **Second Perfect.**

**Ha havído,**                      *There has been.*

##### **Plusperfect.**

**Havía havído.**                      *There had been.*

##### **Future.**

**Havrá,**                      *There will, or shall be.*

Second Future.

Há de haver, *There must be.*

and so of the other Futures.

Imperative.

Háya, *Let there be.*

Optative. Present.

Oxalá que háya, *God grant that there be.*

Imperfect.

Que huviéra, &c. *That there might be.*

Perfect.

Que háya havido, *That there hath been.*

Plusperfect.

Que huviéra havido, *That there had been.*

Future.

Que huviere, *That there shall be, &c.*

The *Spanish* is perfect *Latin* in the Expressions of the impersonal Verbs, which manner cannot be found in the *English*, *French*, and other Languages ; the *English* being obliged to add *there*, or *it*, and the *French* *il*, &c. and this in all the Impersonals throughout all the Conjugations.

Examples.

Hai un hombre que me espéra abáxo para ir à la Comédia, *There is a Man that stays for me below to go to the Play-house.*



Havía cien soldádos enla Emboscáda, *There were one hundred Soldiers in the Ambush.*

No havia mas que treinta y dos, *There were no more than thirty-two.*

Que háya ò no háya póco importa, *that there be, or not, is but of little Importance, &c.*

Ser, *To be, as in what concerns the Essence, or Qualities of a Thing, &c.*

### Indicative.

*Pres.* Es, no es

*Imperf.* éra,

*Perf.* Fue,

*It is, it is not.*

*It was.*

*It hath been.*

and so in the other Tenses.

### Examples.

Es nóche, or es de nóche,

Es verdad,

Era así,

Que sea ò no sea, que se me da, *That it be, or not be, what is it to me.*

*It is Night.*

*It is true.*

*It was so.*

In the same manner is conjugated the Verb *Ser Menester*, to be necessary, or requisite, as

Es Menester, que yo váya à vér la Ciudad the *Londres*, pues es un Mundo pequeño, enque florecen todas las Artes y Ciéncias que están divididas por las quátro partes de el Mundo, *It is necessary that I go to see the City of London, because it is a little World, in which all the Arts and Sciences that are divided in the four Parts of the World do flourish.*

Será Menester, que Pedro y Juan se avéngan, *It will be necessary or requisite, that Peter and John agree together.*

Si fuéra Menester, yo viniéra, *I would come if it should be requisite or necessary, &c.*

*The Verb Impersonal Placer, To please.*

**Indicative Mood.**

<i>Pres.</i> Pláce,	<i>It pleases.</i>
<i>Imperf.</i> Placia,	<i>It did please.</i>
<i>First Perf.</i> Plúgo,	<i>It pleased.</i>
<i>Second Perf.</i> Ha Placido,	<i>It has pleased.</i>

and so in the other Tenses.

*Imperative.*

Pléga,	<i>Let it please, &amp;c.</i>
--------	-------------------------------

*Llover, To Rain.*

Lluéve,	<i>It rains.</i>
Llovía,	<i>It did rain, &amp;c.</i>

*Heder, To Stink.*

Hiéde,	<i>It stinks.</i>
Hedía,	<i>It did stink, &amp;c.</i>

*Olér, To smell.*

This Verbs changes *o* into *bue* in the Present Tenses, as

Huéle,	<i>It smells.</i>
Huéla,	<i>Let it smell.</i>
Que huéla,	<i>That it may smell, &amp;c.</i>

*Acontecér, acaecér, To happen.*

Acontéce,	<i>It happens, &amp;c.</i>
-----------	----------------------------

*Pertenecér, To belong.*

Pertenéce,	<i>It belongs, &amp;c.</i>
------------	----------------------------

Enough of the Impersonal Actives, let us now put an Example of the Impersonal Passive.

*Leírse, To be read.*

Se Lee,	<i>It is reading.</i>
Se Leia,	<i>It was reading.</i>
Se Leyó,	<i>It has been read, &amp;c.</i>

And so are conjugated *establecerse*, to be established or ordered by Parliament, &c.

Se establece,	<i>It is established.</i>
Se establecía,	<i>It was establishing.</i>
Se estableció	<i>It has been established, &amp;c.</i>
<i>Imperative, Establezca,</i>	<i>Let it be established, &amp;c.</i>

*Saberse, To be known.*

Se sabe, or sábese,	<i>It is known.</i>
Se sabía, or sabía se,	<i>It was known.</i>
Se supo, or supose,	<i>It has been known, &amp;c.</i>
<i>Imperative, Sepase,</i>	<i>Let it be known, &amp;c.</i>

N. B. That all the Verbs regular or irregular of the Second Conjugation, may be conjugated in the same manner as those of the first Conjugation by the auxiliar Verb *estar*, and the Gerund of the Verb: as,

Present Tense. Indicative.

Sing.	{	Léo, or estoi Leyendo	} <i>I read, or I am reading, &amp;c.</i>
		Lees, or estás Leyendo	
		Lee, or está Leyendo	
Plur.	{	Leemos, or estamos Leyendo	
		Leéis, or estáis Leyendo	
		Léen, or estan Leyendo	

and so in the rest of the Moods and Tenses.



*Of Verbs Regular of the third Conjugation  
in ir, as*

*Subir, To go up or ascend.*

Indicative Mood.

Present Tense.

<i>Sing.</i>	{	Súbo	}	<i>I go up or ascend, &amp;c.</i>
		Súbes		
		Súbe		
<i>Plur.</i>	{	Subimos		
		Subís		
		Suben		

Preterimperfect.

<i>Sing.</i>	{	Subía	}	<i>I was going up, &amp;c.</i>
		Subías		
		Subía		
<i>Plur.</i>	{	Subíamos		
		Subíadeis, or subíais		
		Subían		

First Preterperfect.

<i>Sing.</i>	{	Subí	}	<i>I went up or ascended, &amp;c.</i>
		Subíste		
		Subió		
<i>Plur.</i>	{	Subimos		
		Subísteis		
		Subieron		

Second and Third Preterperfects.

<i>Sing.</i>	{	He, or huvé	}	Subido,	{	<i>I have gone up or ascended, &amp;c.</i>
		Has				
		Ha				
<i>Plur.</i>	{	Hémos				
		Havéis				
		Han				

Preter-

### Preterpluperfect.

<i>Sing.</i>	{	Havía	}	Subído,	{	<i>I had gone up or ascend- ed, &amp;c.</i>
		Havía				
		Havía				
		Havíamos				
<i>Plur.</i>	{	Havíadeis				
		Havían				

### First Future.

<i>Sing.</i>	{	Subiré	}	<i>I shall or will go up or as- cend, &amp;c.</i>
		Subirás		
		Subirá		
		Subiremos		
<i>Plur.</i>	{	Subiréis		
		Subirán		

### Second Future.

<i>Sing.</i>	{	He, or tengo de subir	}	<i>I am to or must go up or as- cend, &amp;c.</i>
		Has de subir		
		Ha de subir		
		Hémos de subir		
<i>Plur.</i>	{	Havéis de subir		
		Han de subir		

The Third and Fourth Future as in the other Verbs.

### Imperative Mood.

<i>Sing.</i>	{	Súbe tu	<i>Go you up or ascend</i>
		Súba el	<i>Let him go up or ascend</i>
		Subámos nosotros	<i>Let us go up or ascend</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	{	Subid vosotros	<i>Do ye go up or ascend</i>
		Súban ellos	<i>Let them go up or ascend</i>

### Subjunctive

Subjunctive *and* Optative Mood.

{ *Cómo, Aunque, Oxalá,*  
*When, God grant, Would to God.*

Present Tense.

<i>Sing.</i>	{	Súba Súbas Súba	} <i>When or God grant I do go up or ascend, &amp;c.</i>
		Subámos	
<i>Plur.</i>	{	Subáis	
		Súban	

Three Preterimperfects.

<i>Sing.</i>	{	Subiera, subiése, or subiria Subieras, subieses, or subirias Subiera, subiése, or subiria	} <i>When, or would to God I did go up or ascend, &amp;c.</i>
		Subiéramos, subiésemos, or subiríamos	
<i>Plur.</i>	{	Subierades, subiéssedes, or subiríades	
		Subieran, subiesen, or subirían	

Præterperfect.

<i>Sing.</i>	{	Háya Háyas Háya	} Subido, { <i>When, or God grant I have gone up or ascended, &amp;c.</i>
		Hayámos	
<i>Plur.</i>	{	Hayáis	
		Háyan	

First and Second Preterpluperfects.

<i>Sing.</i>	{	Huviéra, or huviése Huviéras, or huviesses Huviéra, or huviése	} Subido, { <i>When, or would to God I had gone up or ascended, &amp;c.</i>
		Huviéramos, or huviésemos	
<i>Plur.</i>	{	Huviérades, or huviéssedes	
		Huviéran, or huviessen	



First Future.

<i>Sing.</i>	{	Subiére	}	<i>When, or God grant I shall or will go up or ascend, &amp;c.</i>
		Subiéres		
		Subiére		
<i>Plur.</i>	{	Subiéremos		
		Subiéredeis		
		Subiéren		

Second Future.

<i>Sing.</i>	{	Huviére, or havré	}	<i>When, or God grant I shall have gone up or ascended, &amp;c.</i>
		Huviéres		
		Huviére		
<i>Plur.</i>	{	Huviéremos		
		Huviéredeis		
		Huviéren		

Infinitive Mood.

Present Tense.

Subir,      *To go up or ascend.*

Preterperfect.

Havér subido,      *To have gone up or ascended.*

Future Tense.

Havér or esperar de subir,      *To be to go up or ascend hereafter.*

Gerund.

Subiendo,      *Going up or ascending.*

Participle of the Present Tense and Active Voice.

El que sube,      *Going up or ascending.*

Participle Passive.

Sabido,      *Gone up or ascended.*

In

In the same manner all other Regular Verbs of the third Conjugation in *ir*, are conjugated ; as *Sufrir*, to suffer, *Hinchir*, or *Hencbir*, to fill, &c.

These four Verbs, *Abrir*, to open, *Cubrir*, to cover, *Descubrir*, to uncover, and *Encubrir*, to conceal, are Regular, except only in the second Preterperfect Tense ; which, instead of *Abrido*, as other Verbs of this Sort, is *Abierto*, *Cubierto*, *Descubierto*, and *Encubierto*. Next follow

*The Irregular Verbs of the third Conjugation,  
in ir, as*

*Venir*, To come.

Indicative Mood.

Present Tense.

Sing.	{	Vengo	I come
		Vienes	You come
		Viene	He comes
Plur.	{	Venimos	We come
		Venis	Ye come
		Vienen	They come

Preterimperfect.

Sing.	{	Venia	} I did come, &c.
		Venias	
		Venia	
Plur.	{	Veniamos	
		Veníadeis, or veniais	
		Venían	

### First Preterperfect.

<i>Sing.</i>	{	Víne	<i>I came</i>
		Veniste	<i>You came</i>
		Vino	<i>He came</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	{	Venimos	<i>We came</i>
		Venisteis	<i>Ye came</i>
		Venieron	<i>They came</i>

### Second and Third Preterperfects.

<i>Sing.</i>	{	He, or hube	}	Venido,	{	<i>I have come, &amp;c.</i>
		Has				
		Ha				
<i>Plur.</i>	{	Hemos				
		Havéis				
		Han				

### Preterpluperfect.

<i>Sing.</i>	{	Havía	}	Venido,	{	<i>I had come, &amp;c.</i>
		Havías				
		Havía				
<i>Plur.</i>	{	Havíamos				
		Haviádeis				
		Havían				

### First Future.

<i>Sing.</i>	{	Vendré, or verné	}	<i>I shall, or will come, &amp;c.</i>
		Vendrás, or vernás		
		Vendrá, or verná		
<i>Plur.</i>	{	Vendrémos, or vernémos		
		Vendréis, or verneis		
		Vendrán, or vernán		

### Second Future.

<i>Sing.</i>	{	He, or téngo de venir	}	<i>I am to, or must come, &amp;c.</i>
		Has de venir		
		Ha de venir		
<i>Plur.</i>	{	Hemos de venir		
		Havéis de venir		
		Han de venir		

The Third and Fourth as in the other Verbs.

Imperative



# Imperative Mood.

<i>Sing.</i>	{	Ven tu	<i>Do you come, or come thou</i>
		Venga el	<i>Let him come</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	{	Vengámos nosótro	<i>Let us come</i>
		Venid vosótro	<i>Do ye come, or let ye come</i>
		Vengan éll	<i>Let them come</i>

## Subjunctive and Optative Mood.

{ *Cómo, Oxalá, Aunque.*  
*When, God grant, Though.*

### Present Tense.

<i>Sing.</i>	{	Venga	}	<i>When, or God grant I do come, &amp;c.</i>
		Vengas		
<i>Plur.</i>	{	Venga		
		Vengámos		
		Vengáis		
		Vengan		

### Three Preterimperfects.

<i>Sing.</i>	{	Viniéra, viniéſſe, vernía, or ven- dría	}	<i>When, or would to God I did come, &amp;c.</i>
		Viniéras, viniéſſes, vernías, or vendrías		
		Viniéra, viniéſſe, vernía, or ven- dría		
<i>Plur.</i>	{	Viniéramos, viniéſſemos, vernía- mos, or vendríamos		
		Viniéradeis, viniéſſedeis, vernía- deis, or vendríadeis		
		Viniéran, viniéſſen, vernían, or vendrían		

Preter-

### Preterperfect.

<i>Sing.</i>	{ Háya Háyas Háya	} Venido,	{ <i>When, or God grant I have come, &amp;c.</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	{ Hayámos Hayáis Háyan		

### First and Second Preterpluperfects.

<i>Sing.</i>	{ Huviera, or huviéssse Huvieras, or huviésses Huviera, or huviéssse	} Venido,	{ <i>When, or would to God I had come, &amp;c.</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	{ Huvieramos, or huviésssemos Huvieradeis, or huviéssedeis Huvieran, or huviéssen		

### First Future.

<i>Sing.</i>	{ Viniere Viniéres Viniere	}	{ <i>When, or God grant I shall, or will come, &amp;c.</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	{ Viniéremos Viniéredeis Viniéren		

### Second Future.

<i>Sing.</i>	{ Huviere, or havré Huvieres, Huviere	} Venido	{ <i>When, or God grant I shall or have come, &amp;c.</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	{ Huvieremos Huvieredeis Huviéren		

### Infinitive Mood.

#### Present.

Venir,

*To come.*

**Future.**

Future.

Havér de venir,

*To be to come.*

Gerund.

Viniendo,

*Coming.*

Participle of the Present Tense and Active Voice.

El que viene,

*He that comes.*

Participle of the Preter Tense and Passive Voice.

Venido,

*Come.*

The Compounds of this Verb *Venir*, are declined in every respect in all Moods and Tenses throughout as their original; as *Revenir*, to return, *Revengo*, *Revine*, &c. *Convenir*, to agree, *Convengo*, *Convine*, &c. *Devenir*, to become, *Devengo*, *Devine*, &c. *Sobrevénir*, to come upon suddenly, *Sobrevengo*, *Sobrevine*, &c.

---

*The Irregular Verb, Decir, To say.*

Indicative Mood.

Present Tense.

Sing. { Digo  
Dices  
Dice  
Plar. { Decimos  
Decís  
Dicen

*I say  
You say  
He says  
We say  
Ye say  
They say*

N

Preter-



**Preterimperfect.**

<i>Sing.</i>	{	Decía	<i>I did say</i>
		Decías	<i>You did say</i>
		Decía	<i>He did say</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	{	Decíamos	<i>We did say</i>
		Decíadeis, or decíais	<i>Ye did say</i>
		Decían	<i>They did say</i>

**First Preterperfect.**

<i>Sing.</i>	{	Dixe	<i>I said</i>
		Dixiste	<i>You said</i>
		Dixo	<i>He said</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	{	Diximos	<i>We said</i>
		Dixisteis	<i>Ye said</i>
		Dixéron	<i>They said</i>

**Second and third Preterperfects.**

<i>Sing.</i>	{	He, or huvé dicho	<i>I have said</i>
		Has dicho	<i>You have said</i>
		Ha dicho	<i>He has said</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	{	Hémos dicho	<i>We have said</i>
		Havéis dicho	<i>Ye have said</i>
		Han dicho	<i>They have said</i>

**Preterpluperfect.**

<i>Sing.</i>	{	Havía	} Dicho,	{	<i>I had said</i>
		Havías			<i>You had said</i>
		Havía			<i>He had said</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	{	Havíamos			<i>We had said</i>
		Haviádeis			<i>Ye had said</i>
		Havian			<i>They had said</i>

**First Future.**

<i>Sing.</i>	{	Diré	<i>I shall or will say</i>
		Dirás	<i>You shall or will say</i>
		Dirá	<i>He shall or will say</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	{	Dirémos	<i>We shall or will say</i>
		Diréis	<i>Ye shall or will say</i>
		Dirán	<i>They shall or will say</i>

**Second**

Second Future.

Sing.	{	He, <i>or</i> <i>téngo</i> de decir	<i>I am to or must say</i>
		Has de decir	<i>You are to or must say</i>
		Ha de decir	<i>He is to or must say</i>
Plur.	{	Hémos de decir	<i>We are to or must say</i>
		Havéis de decir	<i>Ye are to or must say</i>
		Han de decir	<i>They are to or must say</i>

the rest as in other Verbs.

Imperative Mood.

Sing.	{	Di tu, <i>or</i> dice tu	<i>Do thou say</i>
		Diga el	<i>Let him say</i>
Plur.	{	Digámos nosótro	<i>Let us say</i>
		Décid vosótro	<i>Do ye say</i>
		Digan ellos	<i>Let them say</i>

Subjunctive *and* Optative Mood.

Cómo, Aunque, Oxalá.

*When, Though, Would to God.*

Present Tense.

Sing.	{	Diga	}	<i>When, or God grant I</i>
		Digas		
		Diga		
Plur.	{	Digámos		
		Digáis		
		Digan		

*do say, &c.*

Preterimperfect.

Sing.	{	Dixéra, dixéſſe, diría	}	<i>When, or would to God</i>
		Dixéras, dixéſſes, dirías		
		Dixéra, dixéſſe, diría		
Plur.	{	Dixéramos, dixéſſemos, diríamos		
		Dixéradeis, dixéſſedeis, diríadeis		
		Dixéran, dixéſſen, dirían		

*I did say, &c.*

Preterperfect.

Sing.	{	Háya dicho	}	<i>When, or God grant I have said, &amp;c.</i>
		Háyas dicho		
		Háya dicho		
Plur.	{	Hayámos dicho		
		Hayáis dicho		
		Hayán dicho		

First and Second Preterpluperfects.

Sing.	{	Huviéra, or huviéſſe	}	Dicho, {	<i>When, or would to God I had said, &amp;c.</i>
		Huviéras, or huviéſſes			
		Huviéra, or huviéſſe			
Plur.	{	Huviéramos, or huviéſſemos			
		Huviéradeis, or huviéſſedeis			
		Huviéran, or huviéſſen			

First Future.

Sing.	{	Dixére	}	<i>When, or God grant I shall or will say, &amp;c.</i>
		Dixéres		
		Dixére		
Plur.	{	Dixéremos		
		Dixéredeis		
		Dixéren		

Second Future.

Sing.	{	Huviére, or havré	}	Dicho, {	<i>When, or God grant I shall have said, &amp;c.</i>
		Huviéres			
		Huviére			
Plur.	{	Huviéremos			
		Huviéredeis			
		Huviéren			

Infinitive Mood.

Present Tense.

Dicir,

To say.

Preter-



Preterperfect Tense.

Havér dicho,

*To have said.*

Future Tense.

Avér de decír,

*To be to say hereafter.*

Gerund.

Diciendo,

*Saying.*

Participle Active of the Present Tense.

El que dice,

*One saying.*

Participle of the Preter Tense and Passive Voice.

Dicho,

*Said.*

Participle of the Future Tense.

El que ha, *or* esperá de decír,

*He that is to say hereafter.*

The Compounds of this Verb *Decír*, in all Points, through all Moods and Tenses, are declined like the Simple, as,

Bendecír, *to bless*,  
Maldecír, *to curse*,  
Desdecír, *to unsay*,

Bendigo,  
Maldigo,  
Desdigo,

Bendixe.  
Maldixe.  
Desdixe.

*The Irregular Verb, Ir, To go.*

Indicative Mood.

Present Tense.

Sing.	{	Vói	<i>I go</i>
		Vas	<i>You go</i>
		Va	<i>He goes</i>
Plur.	{	Vámos	<i>We go</i>
		Váis	<i>Ye go</i>
		Van	<i>They go</i>

Preterimperfect.

Sing.	{	Ita	<i>I did go</i>
		'Ibas	<i>You did go</i>
		'Iba	<i>He did go</i>
Plur.	{	'Ibamos	<i>We did go</i>
		'Ibais	<i>Ye did go</i>
		'Iban	<i>They did go</i>

First Preterperfect.

Sing.	{	Fuí	<i>I went</i>
		Fuíste	<i>You went</i>
		Fué	<i>He went</i>
Plur.	{	Fuímos	<i>We went</i>
		Fuísteis	<i>Ye went</i>
		Fuéron	<i>They went</i>

Second and third Preterperfects.

Sing.	{	He, or huve	}	'Ido,	{	<i>I have gone, &amp;c.</i>
		Has				
		Ha				
Plur.	{	Hémos	}		{	
		Havéis				
		Han				

Preter-

Preterpluperfect.

Sing.	{	Havía			
		Havías			
		Havía			
Plur.	{	Havíamos			
		Haviádeis			
		Havian			
			} 'Ido,	{	<i>I had gone, &amp;c.</i>

First Future.

Sing.	{	Iré			
		Irás			
		Irá			
Plur.	{	Irémos			
		Iréis			
		Irán			
			} <i>I shall or will go, &amp;c.</i>		

Second Future.

Sing.	{	He, or tengo de ir			
		Has de ir			
		Ha de ir			
Plur.	{	Hémos de ir			
		Havéis de ir			
		Han de ir			
			} <i>I must or am to go, &amp;c.</i>		

the Rest of the Futures as in the other Verbs.

Imperative Mood.

Sing.	{	Ve tu	<i>Do you go</i>
		Váya el	<i>Let him go</i>
		Vámos nosótro	<i>Let us go</i>
Plur.	{	Id vosótro	<i>Do ye go</i>
		Váyan ellos	<i>Let them go</i>



Subjunctive *and* Optative Mood,

{ *Cómo, Aunque, Oxalá,*  
*When, Though, Would to God,*

Present Tense.

<i>Sing.</i>	{	Váya Váyas Váya	}	<i>When, or God grant I do go, &amp;c.</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	{	Váyamos Váyais Váyan		

Preterimperfect Tense.

<i>Sing.</i>	{	Fuéra, fuéſſe, iría Fuéras, fuéſſes, irías Fuéra, fuéſſe, iría	}	<i>When, or would to God I did go, &amp;c.</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	{	Fuéramos, fuéſſemos, iríamos Fuéradeis, fuéſſedeis, iríadeis Fuéran, fuéſſen, irían		

Preterperfect.

<i>Sing.</i>	{	Háya Háyas Háya	}	ído,	{	<i>When, or God grant I have gone, &amp;c.</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	{	Hayámos Hayáis Háyan				

Two Preterpluperfects.

<i>Sing.</i>	{	Huviéra, or huviéſſe Huviéras, or huviéſſes Huviéra, or huviéſſe	}	ído,	{	<i>When, or would to God I had gone, &amp;c.</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	{	Huviéramos, or huviéſſemos Huviéradeis, or huviéſſedeis Huviéran, or huviéſſen				

First Future.

Sing.	{	Fuere	}	<i>When, or God grant I shall or will go, &amp;c.</i>
		Fueres		
		Fuere		
Plur.	{	Fuéremos		
		Fuéredeis		
		Fuéren		

Second Future.

Sing.	{	Huviere, or havré	}	ido,	{	<i>When, or God grant I shall or will have gone, &amp;c.</i>
		Huvières				
		Huviere				
Plur.	{	Huviéremos				
		Huviéredeis				
		Huviéren				

Infinitive Mood.

Present Tense.

Ir, *To go.*

Preterperfect.

Haver ido, *To have gone.*

Future Tense.

Havér de ir, *To be to go hereafter.*

Gerund.

Yéndo, *Going.*

Participle of the Present Tense and Active Voice.

El que va, *He that is going.*

Participle of the Preter Tense and Passive Voice.

ido, *Gone.*

*The*

*The Irregular Verb, Oír, To hear.*

**Indicative Mood.**

**Present Tense.**

<i>Sing.</i>	{	'Oigo	<i>I bear</i>
		'Oyes	<i>You bear</i>
		Oye	<i>He bears</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	{	Oimos	<i>We bear</i>
		Ois	<i>Ye bear</i>
		'Oyen	<i>They bear</i>

**Preterimperfect.**

<i>Sing.</i>	{	Oia	<i>I did bear</i>
		Oias	<i>You did bear</i>
		Oia	<i>He did bear</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	{	Oiamos	<i>We did bear</i>
		Oiais	<i>Ye did bear</i>
		Oian	<i>They did bear</i>

**First Preterperfect.**

<i>Sing.</i>	{	Oí	<i>I heard</i>
		Oíste	<i>You heard</i>
		Oyó	<i>He heard</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	{	Oimos	<i>We heard</i>
		Oísteis	<i>Ye heard</i>
		Oyéron	<i>They heard</i>

**Second and Third Preterperfects.**

<i>Sing.</i>	{	He, or húve	}	Oído,	{	<i>I have heard,</i>
		Has				<i>&amp;c.</i>
		Ha				
<i>Plur.</i>	{	Hémos	}		{	
		Havéis				
		Han				

**Preter-**



Preterpluperfect.

Sing.	{	Havía			
		Havías			
		Havía			
Plur.	{	Havíamos		Oído,	
		Haviádeis			
		Havían			
					{ <i>I had heard, &amp;c.</i>

First Future.

Sing.	{	Oiré			
		Oirás			
		Oirá			
Plur.	{	Oirámos			
		Oiréis			
		Oirán			
					{ <i>I shall, or will hear, &amp;c.</i>

Second Future.

Sing.	{	He, or tengo de oír			
		Has de oír			
		Ha de oír			
Plur.	{	Hémos de oír			
		Havéis de oír			
		Han de oír			
					{ <i>I must, or am to hear, &amp;c.</i>

the Third and Fourth as in other Verbs.

Imperative Mood.

Sing.	{	'Oye tu	<i>Do you hear</i>
		'Oiga aquél	<i>Let him hear</i>
Plur.	{	Oigámos nosótro	<i>Let us hear</i>
		Oíd vosótro	<i>Do ye hear</i>
		'Oigan aquéllos	<i>Let them hear</i>

Subjunctive

# Subjunctive and Optative Moods with the Signs.

{ *Cómo, Aunque, Oxalá.*  
*When, Though, Would to God.*

## Present Tense.

<i>Sing.</i>	{ 'Oiga 'Oigas 'Oiga	}	<i>When, or God grant I do hear, &amp;c.</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	{ Oigámos Oigáis 'Oigan		

## Three Preterimperfects.

<i>Sing.</i>	{ Oyéra, oyéſſe, or oiría Oyéras, oyéſſes, or oirías Oyéra, oyéſſe, or oiría	}	<i>When, or would to God I did hear, &amp;c.</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	{ Oyéramos, oyéſſemos, or oiríamos Oyéradeis, oyéſſedeis, or oiríadeis Oyéran, oyéſſen, or oirían		

## Preterperfect Tense.

<i>Sing.</i>	{ Háya Háyas Háya	}	Oído,	{ <i>When, or God grant I have heard, &amp;c.</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	{ Hayámos Hayáis Háyan			

## Two Preterpluperfects.

<i>Sing.</i>	{ Huviera, or huviéſſe Huvieras, or huviéſſes Huviera, or huviéſſe	}	Oído,	{ <i>When, or would to God I had heard, &amp;c.</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	{ Huvieramos, or huviéſſemos Huvieradeis, or huviéſſedeis Huvieran, or huviéſſen			

First Future.

<i>Sing.</i>	{ Oyére Oyéres Oyére	}	<i>When, or God grant I shall, or will hear, &amp;c.</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	{ Oyéremos Oyéredeis Oyéren		

Second Future.

<i>Sing.</i>	{ Huviére, or havré Huviéres, Huviére	}	Oído,	{ <i>When, or God grant I shall or will have heard, &amp;c.</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	{ Huviéremos Huviéredeis Huviéren			

Infinitive Mood.

Present.

Oír, *To hear.*

Preterperfect.

Havér oído, *To have heard.*

Future.

Havér de oír, *To be to hear hereafter.*

Gerund.

Oyéndo, *Hearing.*

Participle of the Present Tense and Active Voice.

Oyénte, or el que óye, *He that is hearing.*

Participle of the Preter Tense and Passive Voice.

Oído, *Heard.*

*The Irregular Verb, Herir, To hurt or wound.*

Indicative Mood.

Present Tense.

<i>Sing.</i>	{	Hiéro	<i>I wound</i>
		Hiéres	<i>You wound</i>
		Hiére	<i>He wounds</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	{	Herímos	<i>We wound</i>
		Herís	<i>Ye wound</i>
		Hiéren	<i>They wound</i>

All the other Tenses of the Indicative Mood are as in Verbs Regular ; as

Preterimperfect.

Hería, Herías, &c.      *I did wound, &c.*

First Preterperfect.

Herí, Heriste, &c.      *I wounded, &c.*

Second Preterperfect.

He, has, &c. herído,      *I have wounded, &c.*

Preterpluperfect.

Havía, havías, &c. herído,      *I had wounded, &c.*

First Future.

Heriré, Herirás, &c.      *I will or shall wound, &c.*

Second Future.

He or tengo, &c. de herir,      *I, &c. am to or must wound, &c.*

Imperative



## Imperative Mood.

Sing.	{	Hiére tu	<i>Do you strike or wound</i>
		Hiéra el	<i>Let him strike or wound</i>
Plur.	{	Hirámos nosotros	<i>Let us strike or wound</i>
		Herid vosotros	<i>Do ye strike or wound</i>
		Hiéran ellos	<i>Let them strike or wound</i>

## Subjunctive and Optative Mood.

Cómo, Oxalá, Aunque.  
*When, God grant, Though.*

### Present Tense.

Sing.	{	Hiéra	}	<i>When, or God grant I do wound, &amp;c.</i>
		Hiéras		
Plur.	{	Hiéra		
		Hirámos		
		Hiráis		
		Hiéran		

### Three Preterimperfects.

Sing.	{	Hiriéra, hiriésse, or heriría	}	<i>When, or would to God I did wound, &amp;c.</i>
		Hiriéras, hiriésse, or herirías		
		Hiriéra, hiriésse, or heriría		
Plur.	{	Hiriéramos, hiriésemos, or heriríamos		
		Hiriéradeis, hiriéssedeis, or heriríadeis		
		Hiriéran, hiriéssen, or herirían		

### Future.

Sing.	{	Hiriére	}	<i>When, or would to God I shall or will wound, &amp;c.</i>
		Hiriéres		
Plur.	{	Hiriére		
		Hiriéremos		
		Hiriéredeis		
		Hiriéren		

The other Tenses as in Regular Verbs. The Infinitive Mood the same. The Gerund *Hiriendo*, Wounding.

*The Irregular Verbs, Dormir, to sleep, and Morir, to dye.**Dormir, To sleep.**Indicative Mood.**Present Tense.*

<i>Sing.</i>	{	Duérmo	<i>I sleep</i>
		Duérmes	<i>You sleep</i>
		Duérne	<i>He sleeps</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	{	Dormimos	<i>We sleep</i>
		Dormís	<i>Ye sleep</i>
		Duérlen	<i>They sleep</i>

*Preterimperfect.*

<i>Sing.</i>	{	Dormía	<i>I did sleep</i>
		Dormías	<i>You did sleep</i>
		Dormía	<i>He did sleep</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	{	Dormíamos	<i>We did sleep</i>
		Dormíades	<i>Ye did sleep</i>
		Dormían	<i>They did sleep</i>

*First Preterperfect.*

<i>Sing.</i>	{	Dormí	<i>I slept</i>
		Dormiste	<i>You slept</i>
		Dormió	<i>He slept</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	{	Dormimos	<i>We slept</i>
		Dormisteis	<i>Ye slept</i>
		Durmieron	<i>They slept</i>

*Second and Third Preterperfects.*

<i>Sing.</i>	{	He, or hube dormido	<i>I have slept</i>
		Has dormido	<i>You have slept</i>
		Ha dormido	<i>He has slept</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	{	Hemos dormido	<i>We have slept</i>
		Havéis dormido	<i>Ye have slept</i>
		Han dormido	<i>They have slept</i>

*Preter-*

Preterpluperfect.

<i>Sing.</i>	{	Havía			
		Havías			
		Havía			
		Havíamos			
<i>Plur.</i>	{	Havíadeis			
		Havían			
			}	Dormído,	{ <i>I had slept, &amp;c.</i>

First Future.

<i>Sing.</i>	{	Dormiré			
		Dormirás			
		Dormirá			
		Dormiremos			
<i>Plur.</i>	{	Dormiréis			
		Dormirán			
			}		{ <i>I shall or will sleep, &amp;c.</i>

Second Future.

<i>Sing.</i>	{	He, or tengo de dormir			
		Has de dormir			
		Ha de dormir			
		Hémos de dormir			
<i>Plur.</i>	{	Havéis de dormir			
		Han de dormir			
			}		{ <i>I am to or must sleep, &amp;c.</i>

The other Futures as in the other Verbs.

Imperative Mood.

<i>Sing.</i>	{	Duérme tu		<i>Do you sleep</i>
		Duérma		<i>Let him sleep</i>
		Durmámos		<i>Let us sleep</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	{	Dormid		<i>Do ye sleep</i>
		Duértan		<i>Let them sleep</i>

# Subjunctive and Optative Mood.

*Cómo, Aunque, Oxalá.  
When, Though, Would to God.*

## Present Tense.

<i>Sing.</i>	{ Duérma Duérmas Duérma	} <i>When, or God grant I do sleep, &amp;c.</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	{ Durmámos Durmáis Duérman	

## Three Preterimperfects.

<i>Sing.</i>	{ Durmiéra, durmiésse, or dormiria Durmiéras, durmiésses, or dormirías Durmiéra, durmiésse, or dormiria	} <i>When, or would to God I did sleep, &amp;c.</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	{ Durmiéramos, durmiéssemos, or dormiríamos Durmiéradeis, durmiéssedeis, or dormiríadeis Durmiéran, durmiéssen, or dormirían	

## Preterperfect.

<i>Sing.</i>	{ Háya dormido Háyas dormido Háya dormido	} <i>When, or God grant I have slept, &amp;c.</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	{ Hayámos dormido Hayáis dormido Háyan dormido	

## Two Preterpluperfects.

<i>Sing.</i>	{ Huviéra, or huviésse Huviéras, or huviésses Huviéra, or huviésse	} Dormido, { <i>When, or would to God I had slept, &amp;c.</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	{ Huviéramos, or huviéssemos Huviéradeis, or huviéssedeis Huviéran, or huviéssen	



First Future:

<i>Sing.</i>	{ Durmière Durmières Durmière	} <i>When, or God grant I shall or will sleep, &amp;c.</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	{ Durmiéremos Durmiéredeis Durmiéren	

Second Future.

<i>Sing.</i>	{ Huviére, or havré Huviéres Huviére	} Dormido, {	<i>When, or God grant I shall or will have slept, &amp;c.</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	{ Huviéremos Huviéredeis Huviéren		

Infinitive Mood.

Present Tense.

Dormir, *To sleep.*

Preterperfect.

Havér dormido, *To have slept.*

Future Tense.

Havér de dormir, *To be to sleep.*

Gerund.

Durmiendo, *Sleeping.*

Participle of the Present Tense and Active Voice.

Dormiente, or el que Duérme, *He that is sleeping.*

Participle of the Preter Tense and Passive Voice.

Dormido, *Slept.*

Participle of the Future Tense.

El que ha, or espéra de dormir, *About to sleep hereafter.*

Morir,

To dye.

## Indicative Mood.

## Present Tense.

Sing.	{	Muéro	<i>I dye</i>
		Muéres	<i>You dye</i>
		Muere	<i>He dyes</i>
Plur.	{	Morimos	<i>We dye</i>
		Moris	<i>Ye dye</i>
		Muéren	<i>They dye</i>

## Preterimperfect Tense.

Sing.	{	Moria	<i>I did dye</i>
		Morias	<i>You did dye</i>
		Moria	<i>He did dye</i>
Plur.	{	Moríamos	<i>We did dye</i>
		Moriais	<i>Ye did dye</i>
		Morian	<i>They did dye</i>

## First Preterperfect.

Sing.	{	Mori	<i>I dy'd</i>
		Moriste	<i>You dy'd</i>
		Murió	<i>He dy'd</i>
Plur.	{	Morimos	<i>We dy'd</i>
		Moristeis	<i>Ye dy'd</i>
		Muriéron	<i>They dy'd</i>

## Second and Third Preterperfects.

Sing.	{	He, or huvé muerto	<i>I have dy'd</i>
		Has muerto	<i>You have dy'd</i>
		Ha muerto	<i>He has dy'd</i>
Plur.	{	Hémos muerto	<i>We have dy'd</i>
		Havéis muerto	<i>Ye have dy'd</i>
		Han muerto	<i>They have dy'd</i>

Preterpluperfect.

<i>Sing.</i>	{	Havía			
		Havías			
		Havía			
<i>Plur.</i>	{	Havíamos			
		Haviádeis			
		Havían			
			{	Muerto,	{
					<i>I had dy'd, &amp;c.</i>

First Future.

<i>Sing.</i>	{	Moriré			
		Morirás			
		Morirá			
<i>Plur.</i>	{	Moriremos			
		Moriréis			
		Morirán			
			{		<i>I shall, or will dye,</i>
					<i>&amp;c.</i>

Second Future.

<i>Sing.</i>	{	He <i>or</i> tengo de morir			
		Has de morir			
		Ha de morir			
<i>Plur.</i>	{	Hémos de morir			
		Havéis de morir			
		Han de morir			
			{		<i>I am to, or must dye, &amp;c.</i>

Imperative Mood.

<i>Sing.</i>	{	Muére	<i>Do you dye</i>
		Muéra	<i>Let him dye</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	{	Murámos	<i>Let us dye</i>
		Morid	<i>Do ye dye</i>
		Muéran	<i>Let them dye</i>

# Subjunctive *and* Optative Mood.

**Cómo, Aunque, Oxalá.**  
*When, Though, Would to God.*

## Present Tense.

<i>Sing.</i>	{	Muéra	}	<i>When, or God grant I do dye, &amp;c.</i>
		Muéras		
		Muéra		
<i>Plur.</i>	{	Murámos		
		Muráis		
		Muéran		

## Three Preterimperfects.

<i>Sing.</i>	{	Muriéra, muriéſſe, or mori- ría	}	<i>When, or would to God I did dye, &amp;c.</i>
		Muriéras, muriéſſes, or mori- rias		
		Muriéra, muriéſſe, or mori- ría		
<i>Plur.</i>	{	Muriéramos, muriéſſemos, or moriríamos		
		Muriéradeis, muriéſſedeis, or moriríadeis		
		Muriéran, muriéſſen, or mori- rían		

## Preterperfect.

<i>Sing.</i>	{	Háya muérto	}	<i>When, or God grant I have dy'd, &amp;c.</i>
		Háyas muérto		
		Háya muérto		
<i>Plur.</i>	{	Hayámos muérto		
		Hayáis muérto		
		Háyan muérto		

## Two Preterpluperfects.

<i>Sing.</i>	{	Huviéra, or huviéſſe	}	<i>When, or would to God I had dy'd, &amp;c.</i>
		Huviéras, or huviéſſes		
		Huviéra, or huviéſſe		
<i>Plur.</i>	{	Huviéramos, or huviéſſemos		
		Huviéradeis, or huviéſſedeis		
		Huviéran, or huviéſſen		

First



First Future.

Sing.	{	Muriere	}	<i>When, or God grant I shall, or will dye, &amp;c.</i>
		Muriéres		
		Muriere		
Plur.	{	Muriéremos		
		Muriéredeis		
		Muriéren		

Second Future.

Sing.	{	Huviere, or havré	}	<i>When, or God grant I shall, or will have dy'd, &amp;c.</i>
		Huviéres		
		Huviere		
Plur.	{	Huviéremos		
		Huviéredeis		
		Huviéren		

Infinitive Mood.

Present Tense.

Morir, *To dye.*

Preterperfect.

Havér muerto, *To have dy'd.*

Future Tense.

Havér de morir, *To be to dye.*

Gerund.

Muriendo, *Dying.*

Participle of the Present Tense and Active Voice.

El que muere, *He that is dying.*

Participle of the Preter Tense and Passive Voice.

Muerto, *Dyed.*

Participle of the Future Tense.

El que há, or espéra de morir, *About to dye hereafter.*

The following Irregular Verbs of the third Conjugation, change *e* of the Penultima or last Syllable but one of the infinitive Mood into *i*, in the first, second, and third Persons singular, and the third Person plural of the Present Tense of the Indicative Mood ; the second and third Persons singular, and the first and third plural of the Imperative Mood ; and throughout the Present Tense of the Optative and Subjunctive Moods ; thus,

*Servir*, to serve, *Sírvo*, I serve, *Sírves*, *Sírve*, *Servímos*, *Servís*, *Sírven*. Imperative, *Sírve*, *Sírva*, *Sírveámos*, *Servíd*, *Sírvan*. Optative and Subjunctive, *Sírva*, *Sírvas*, &c. All other Tenses in each Mood as the regular Verbs. The others that are conjugated after this manner ; are,

<i>Reír</i> , To laugh,	<i>Río</i> , I laugh,	<i>Ries</i> , <i>Ríe</i> , &c.
<i>Concebir</i> , To conceive,	<i>Concíbo</i> , I conceive,	<i>Concíbes</i> , <i>Concíbe</i> , &c.
<i>Gemir</i> , To sigh,	<i>Gímo</i> , I sigh,	<i>Gímes</i> , <i>Gíme</i> , &c.

The next that follow add *i* before *e* in the same Moods, Tenses, and Persons, as above ; as

<i>Advertir</i> , To take notice,	<i>Adviérto</i> , I take notice,	<i>Adviértés</i> , &c.
<i>Arrepentir</i> , To repent,	<i>Arrepíento</i> , I repent,	<i>Arrepíéntés</i> , &c.
<i>Consentir</i> , To consent,	<i>Consíento</i> , I consent,	<i>Consíéntés</i> , &c.
<i>Mentir</i> , To lie,	<i>Míento</i> , I lie,	<i>Míéntés</i> , &c.

The Verbs *Elegir*, To chuse, and *Regir*, To rule, change *eg* into *ij* in the same Moods, Tenses, and Persons, as above ; thus *Elegir*, *Elíjo* ; *Regir*, *Ríjo*.

*Fingir*, To feign, and *Ungir*, To anoint, in the same manner make *Fínjo*, and *Unjo*, and so in the other Moods, Tenses, and Persons above mention'd.

*Seguir*, To follow, makes *Sígo*, *Sígues*, *Sigue*, and so in the other Moods, Tenses, and Persons, as above.

These that follow in the same Moods, Tenses, and Persons above mentioned, are conjugated as here noted.

*Conducir*,

*Conducir*, To conduct, *Condúzgo*, *Condúces*, *Condúce*, *Condúcimos*, *Conducís*, *Condúcon*. Preterperfect, *Condúxe*, *Condúxiste*, &c. Optative and Subjunctive, Present, *Condúzga*. Preterimperfect, *Conduxera*, or *Conduxesse*. Future, *Conduxére*. In the same manner, *Introducír*, *Inducír*, *Traducír*, and *Producír*.

*Salír*, To go out. Present, Indicative. *Sálgo*, *Sáles*, *Sále*, *Salímos*, *Salís*, *Sálen*. Imperative Mood, *Sal*, or *Sále*, *Sálga*, *Salgámos*, *Salíd*, *Sálgan*. Optative and Subjunctive Present, *Sálga*, *Sálgas*, &c. The rest Regular.

# *Of Verbs Passive, Ser oído, To be heard.*

## Indicative.

### Present.

### Imperfect.

Sing.	{	Sói oído	}	<i>I am heard.</i>	{	'Era oído	}	<i>I was heard.</i>		
		Eres oído				'Eras oído				
		Es oído				'Era oído				
Plur.	{	Sómos oídos	}		{	Eramos oídos	}			
		Sóis oídos				Erais oídos				
		Son oídos				Eran oídos				

## Perfect.

Sing.	{	Fuí, or hé sido oído	}	<i>I have been heard, &amp;c.</i>
		Fuiste, or has sido oído		
		Fué, or ha sido oído		
Plur.	{	Fuímos, or hémos sido oídos	}	
		Fuisteis, or havéis sido oídos		
		Fuéron, or han sido oídos, &c.		

The Reciprocal thus :

*Reirse*, To Laugh.

Present

## Present Tense.

## Preterimperfect.

<i>Sing.</i>	{ Me río Te ríes Se ríe	<i>I laugh.</i>	{ Me reía Te reías Se reían	<i>I was laughing.</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	{ Nos reímos Os reís Se ríen		{ Nos reíamos Os reíadeis Se reían, &c.	

*Introducírse, To be introduced.*
*Present.*
*Imperfect.*

<i>Sing.</i>	{ Me introduzgo Te introduces Se introduce	<i>I am introduced.</i>	{ Me introducía Te introducías Se introducía	<i>I was introduced.</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	{ Nos introducimos Os introducís Se introducen		{ Nos introducíamos Os intreducíais Se introducían	

## Preterperfect.

<i>Sing.</i>	{ Me introduxe, or heme introducido Te introduxíste, or haste introducido Se introduxo, or hase introducido	<i>I have been introduced, or I introduced myself.</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	{ Nos introduximos, or hemosnos introducido, or nos hémos introducido Os introduxisteis, or os havéis introducido Se introduxéron, or se han introducido	

## Imperative.

<i>Sing.</i>	{ Introducete tu Introduzgase el	<i>Be introduced thou Let him be introduced</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	{ Introduzgamonos nosotros Introduced os vosotros Introduzganse aquéllos	<i>Let us be introduced Be ye introduced Let them be introduced</i>

And so in the rest of the Reciprocals, which are terminated in *se* in the Infinitive, except the Impersonal Passive.

*Impersonal*



*Impersonal Actives.*

**Convenir, To be convenient, fit, or proper.**

**Indicative.**

<i>Pres.</i> Conviene	<i>It is convenient</i>
<i>Imperf.</i> Convenía	<i>It was convenient</i>
<i>First Perf.</i> Convino	} <i>It has been convenient</i>
<i>Second Perf.</i> Ha convenido	
<i>Plusperf.</i> Havía convenido	<i>It had been convenient</i>
<i>First Future,</i> Convendrá	<i>It will be convenient</i>
<i>Second Future,</i> Há de convenir	<i>It must be convenient</i>
<i>Imperative,</i> Convenga	<i>Let it be convenient, &amp;c.</i>

**Cumplir, To behave.**

<i>Present.</i> Cuple	<i>It behoves.</i>
<i>Imperfect.</i> Cumplía	<i>It did behave.</i>
<i>First Perfect.</i> Cumplió	<i>It behoveth.</i>
<i>Second Perfect.</i> Ha cumplido	<i>It has behaved.</i>
<i>Plusperfect.</i> Havía cumplido	<i>It had behaved.</i>
<i>Future.</i> Cumplirá,	<i>It will behave.</i>

and so through the third Person of the other Moods. It is to be observed, that this Verb *Cumplir*, is given here as Impersonal, only in this Signification of *Behoving*, or *being meet* ; for *Cumplir*, when

204     *The RUDIMENTS of*  
when it signifies *to compleat, or fulfill*, is a regular  
Verb, and has all its Persons accordingly.

---

*Of the Impersonal Passives.*

*Decírse, To be said.*

*Indicative.*

<i>Present.</i> Se dice, or dícese	<i>It is said.</i>
<i>Imperfect.</i> Se decía	<i>It was said.</i>
<i>First Perfect.</i> Se dijo	<i>It was, or has been said.</i>
<i>Second Perfect.</i> Se há dicho	<i>It has been said.</i>
<i>Plusperfect.</i> Se havia dicho	<i>It had been said.</i>
<i>Future.</i> Se dirá	<i>It shall, or will be said, &amp;c.</i>

After the same Manner are conjugated,

*Escribirse, To be written.*

<i>Present.</i> Se escribe,	<i>It is written.</i>
-----------------------------	-----------------------

*Referírse, To be related or referred.*

<i>Present.</i> Se Refiere,	<i>It is related, or referred, &amp;c.</i>
-----------------------------	--

The Verbs of this Conjugation are likewise declined by the Verb *Estar* and the Gerund, as

<i>Oigo, or estoy oyendo,</i>	<i>I hear, or I am hearing.</i>
<i>Escribo, or estoy escribiendo,</i>	<i>I write, or I am writing.</i>
<i>Pido, or estoy pidiendo, &amp;c.</i>	<i>I beg, or I am begging.</i>

There

There are likewise some few Defective Verbs in the *Spanish* Tongue, which are perfect *Latin*, viz.

*Salve*, hail, God save you, which is a saluting Verb, much used in their Prayers to the *Virgin Mary*, and in Poetry, and has no other Tense in *Spanish* than the Imperative.

*Ave*, All hail, God save you, &c. is likewise used in *Spanish*, and found in several Books in a saluting manner, but never used otherwise than at Prayers, &c.

*Vale*, farewell, adieu, God be with you, is much used by the *Spaniards*, especially in writing, instead of *Your most Obedient Humble Servant*; and has but two Persons in the Imperative Mood, viz. *Vale*, and *Valéte*.

This may suffice as to Verbs, the Necessity of giving an Account of the Irregulars, and Impersonals having taken up much time.

## CHAP. IV.

### *Of Participles.*

**A**LTHO' there has been said enough of the Participles, as to what concerns the Grammar, in the third Chapter before the Conjugation of Verbs; yet I think it proper to observe,

That this Name *Participle*, comes from the *Latin Participium*, and is so called for its partaking of the Verb and Noun, as it has been said before.

Some are Simple, and others Compound, as

*Andante,*  
*Comandante,*

*Docto.*  
*Indocto.*

All the *Spanish* Verbs have not the Participles Present, and of the Future ; and they are supplied by *elque*, and the third Person Singular of the Present Tense of the Indicative Mood, &c. as it is observed before.

*Note*, That the Participles of the Present Tense are often made Nouns in *Spanish*, as *Oyente*, *Escribiente*, *Antecedente*, &c.

## CHAP. V.

### *Of Adverbs.*

**H**AVING treated at large of the four declinable Parts of Speech, we now come to the four that are undeclinable ; the first of which is the Adverb, (and so called because it is joined to Verbs, to declare the manner, or the Circumstances of the Action, or Passion ; as *el Dánza*, or *Báila bien*, he dances well ; *el pudeció cruelmente*, he suffer'd cruelly : it often explains likewise the Nouns, as *un bómbré muy sábio*, a very learned Man ; *Totalmente impudente*, intirely impudent, &c.

Of Adverbs there are several Sorts, some being Primitives, as *Si*, Yes ; *No*, No, &c. Others are Derivatives, as particularly those which proceed from the Feminine Gender of Adjectives, as from *álta*, high, *altaménte*, highly ; from *graciosa*, pretty, *graciosaménte*, prettily ; or from those in *ente*, z, *al*, *il*, &c. as *prudenteménte*, prudently ; *Felizménte*, happily ; *Moralménte*, morally ; *Facilménte*, easily, &c.

There are Adverbs of Quality, of Quantity, of Time, &c. as may be seen here following,



*Adverbs of Quality.*

Fielmente, <i>faithfully</i>	Santamente, <i>holily</i>
Buenamente, or bien, <i>well</i>	Fieramente, <i>fiercely, &amp;c.</i>
Malamente, or mal, <i>ill</i>	

And so the like may be form'd of all Adjectives.

*Adverbs of Quantity.*

Mucho, <i>much</i>	Pordemás, <i>to no purpose</i>
Poco, <i>little</i>	Demasiado, <i>too much</i>
Mas, <i>more</i>	

*Adverbs of Time.*

Hói, <i>to day</i>	Nunca, or jamás, <i>never</i>
Ahiér, <i>yesterday</i>	Quándo, <i>when</i>
Mañana, <i>to morrow</i>	Siempre, <i>always</i>
Antehier, <i>the day before</i>	Entónces, <i>then</i>
<i>yesterday</i>	Miéntras, <i>whilst</i>
Mucho ha, <i>long since</i>	Súbito, or repenteménte,
Poco ha, <i>lately</i>	<i>suddenly</i>
Ahóra, <i>now</i>	Tárde, <i>late</i>
!Antes, <i>before</i>	Tempráno, <i>early</i>
Ahún, <i>yet, even</i>	à la tarde, <i>in the evening</i>
Amenúdo, <i>often</i>	A deshóra, <i>unseasonably,</i>
Luégo, <i>forthwith</i>	<i>&amp;c.</i>

*Adverbs of Place.*

Aquí, <i>here</i>	Delànte, <i>before</i>
Allí, <i>there</i>	Atrás, <i>behind</i>
Adónde, <i>where</i>	Apárte, <i>apart, or aside</i>
De dónde, <i>from whence</i>	Arriba, <i>above</i>
Acá, <i>hither</i>	Abáxo, <i>below</i>
Acullá, <i>yonder</i>	Cérca, <i>near</i>
Ahí, <i>in that place</i>	Cábe, <i>close by</i>

De aquí, <i>from hence</i>	Junto, <i>adjoining</i>
De allí, <i>from thence.</i>	Léxos, <i>far off</i>
Déntro, <i>within</i>	Encíma, <i>upon</i>
Fuéra, <i>without</i>	Debáxo, <i>underneath</i>

*Adverbs of Affirmation.*

Si, <i>yes</i>	Verdaderaménte, <i>truly</i>
Cíerto, <i>truly</i>	También, <i>as well, also</i>
Ciertaménte, <i>certainly</i>	Antes, <i>rather</i>
En verdád, <i>in truth</i>	

*Of Denying.*

No, <i>no, or not</i>	Ni, <i>neither</i>
Náda, <i>nothing</i>	Tampóco, <i>neither</i>

*Of Number.*

Una vez, <i>once</i>	Múchas véces, <i>often</i>
Dos véces, <i>twice</i>	Pócas véces, <i>seldom</i>
Tres véces, <i>three times</i>	Amenúdo, <i>often</i>

*Of Shewing.*

He aquí,	Behold here
----------	-------------

*Of Encouraging.*

Ea, ea pués	Go to then
-------------	------------

*Of Increasing.*

Mas,	More
------	------

*Adverbs of Diminishing.*

Ménos, <i>less</i>	Páso, <i>soft and fair</i>
Póco, <i>little</i>	

*Of Wishing.*

Oxalá, *would to God*      O si, *O if it would be*

*Of Asking:*

Porqué, <i>why</i>	De dónde, <i>from whence</i>
Que, <i>what</i>	Quándo, <i>when</i>
Dónde, <i>where</i>	Cómo, <i>how</i>
Adónde, <i>whither</i>	

*Of Doubting.*

Quiza, *perhaps*      Porventúra, *peradventure*

*Of Order.*

Primeraménte, <i>firstly</i>	Aquénde, <i>on this side</i>
Después, <i>after</i>	Finalménte, <i>in fine</i>
Allénde, <i>beyond</i>	'A lo último } <i>lastly, &amp;c.</i>
Alfin, <i>at the end</i>	'A la Póstre }
Alcábo, <i>at the end</i>	

*Of Likeness.*

Cómo, <i>as</i>	Así, <i>so</i>
Casi, <i>almost</i>	Tan, tanto, <i>so much, &amp;c.</i>

*Of Chance.*

A cáso, *accidentally.*      Por dícha, *perchance*

*Of Comparison.*

Mas, <i>more</i>	Mejór, <i>better</i>
Ménos, <i>less</i>	Peór, <i>worse</i>

P

*Of.*

*Of gathering together.*

Junto, or Juntaménte	Together
A montónes	In heaps

*Of Severing.*

Apárte	Asunder
--------	---------

The Adverb *Hárto*, Enough, varies as to the Gender before Substantives ; for the *Spaniards* say, *Hárto Pan*, Bread enough, where it is Masculine ; and *Hárta Agua*, Water enough, where it is Feminine : But before Adjectives it always retains the Masculine Termination ; as *Hárto buéno*, and *Hárto buéna*, though *buéno* and *buéna* are Masculine and Feminine. There are some other Adverbs of the same Sort ; but it would be too tedious to mention all Things.

*Note*, That the Adjectives are often taken as Adverbs, and then they retain the Masculine Termination ; as *Hágase esto priméro*, let this be done first ; *póngase esto derécho*, put this right, or to rights.

## C H A P. VI.

*Of* CONJUNCTIONS.

**C**ONjunctions are a Part of Speech that joins Words and puts Sentences together. Some Conjunctions are Copulative, as uniting Words, and connecting the Sense ; others are Disjunctive, dividing the Sense, and only joining the Expressions ;



sions ; others are conditional, shewing the Causes of Things ; others Rational or Conclusive, which some call Collective or Illative ; and others Adversatives, by which is demonstrated that which we say cannot hurt or obstruct. Besides these, the *Latin* hath others which they call Ordinatives, as also Expletives ; but these last only serve for Ornament, for they no way add to, or take from the Discourse.

Conjunctions Copulative are *y* and *e*, signifying *and* ; viz. *y* before all Words, excepting those that begin with *i* Vowel, instead of which is put *e*, as we have said in the Observation on the Vowels ; *Cómo*, as ; *También*, also.

Conjunctions Disjunctive are, *Ni*, neither ; *O*, or ; *ó*, or, either ; *yá*, either, as *yá ésto*, *yá aquéllo*, either this or that.

Causative, as *Porqué*, why, wherefore.

Conditional, *Si*, if ; *dádo que*, granting that.

Exceptive, as *Sinó*, if not ; *mas*, but ; *otraménte*, otherwise.

There are others of other Sorts, as *Aloménos*, at least ; *Aunque*, although ; *tóda vía*, notwithstanding, nevertheless.

## CHAP. VII.

### Of PREPOSITIONS.

**P**Repositions are a Part of Speech most commonly set before other parts, either in Apposition ; as *ante la justicia*, before a Justice ; or else in Composition ; as *disponér*, to dispose, *injústo*, unjust.

Those us'd in Composition are *a*, *ad*, *al*, *Arabick*, *am*, *co*, *com*, *con*, *de*, *des*, *di*, *dis*, *en*, *ex*, *in*, *ob*, *pre*, *pro*, *re*, *se*, *so*, *su*, &c.

In *a*, as *Acanalár*, to cut in Gutters or Channels ; *abatanár*, to full or mill Cloth.

*ad*, as *Advenedízo*, a stranger ; *advertír*, to advertise.

*al*, *Alcázar*, a Royal Castle or Palace ; *Alquitára*, a Limbeck.

*am*, *Ampáro*, Protection ; *amparádo*, protected.  
*co*, *coberedéro*, coheir ; *co-ordinár*, to co-ordain, or ordain together.

*com*, *comparár*, to compare ; *comprometér*, to compromise.

*con*, *convenír*, to agree ; *condescendér*, to condescend.

*de*, *degenerár*, to degenerate ; *deponér*, to depose.

*des*, *desbacer*, to undo ; *desfigurádo*, disfigured.  
*di*, *diferír*, to defer ; *disfundír*, to diffuse, to spread abroad.

*dis*, *disculpár*, to excuse ; *disponér*, to dispose.  
*en*, *entorpecér*, to grow dull or stupid ; *envergonzár*, to make ashamed.

*ex*, *exponér*, to expound, interpret ; *expandér*, to spread.

*in*, *Indignación*, Indignation ; *inferír*, to infer.  
*ob*, *obtenér*, to obtain ; *obtenído*, obtained.

*pre*, *preponér*, to set before ; *prevenír*, to prevent.

*pro*, *proponér*, to propose ; *proseguír*, to prosecute.

*re*, *reedificár*, to rebuild ; *reponér*, to put again.

*se*, *separár*, to separate ; *separádo*, separated.

*so*, *socorrér*, to succour ; *solicitár*, to sollicite.

*Su*, *suponer*, to suppose ; *suportár*, to support, &c.

These Prepositions following serve to the Genitive Case.

*Antes*, as *Antes del día*, before Day-break.

*Delánte*, before, as *Delánte del Juez*, before the Judge.

*De*,

*De*, of; as *la Muger de Pédro*, Peter's Wife, that is, the Wife of Peter.

*Dentro*, within; as *Dentro de mi cása*, within my House.

*Detrás*, behind; as *detrás del Cócke*, behind the Coach.

*Despues*, after; as *despues de esto*, after this.

*Báxo*, } under; as *llevába un Coléto báxo de su cápa*,  
*Debáxo* } he had on a Buff-Coat, under his  
Cloak. *Debáxo de mi Manto*, *al Réy máto*, under my Cloak I'll kill the King.

*Abáxo*, down, below, is an Adverb.

*Encima*, upon; as *encima del Agua*, upon the Water.

*Derredór*, round about, as *al derredór de Castillo*, round about the Castle.

*Cérca*, near; as *Pedro está cerca de Juan*, Peter is near to John.

*Acérca*, Though formerly used as a Proposition instead of *Cérca*, it is now used only as an Adverb, and signifies *concerning*, *near*, and governs a Genitive; as *acérca de esto que dice?* what say you concerning this? *los días acérca del Nacimiento de Christo son muy frios*, the Days about or near Christmas are very cold.

*Fuéra*, out; as *Váya fuéra de mi Cása*, go out of my House.

*Fuéra*, *afuéra*, without, are Adverbs.

*Entórno* } about; as *entorno de mi*, about me, round  
*Contórno* } about me.

*Enfrente*, over-against; as *Enfrente de san Páblo*, over-against St Paul's, &c.

The following serve for the Dative Case.

*á* } to, { as, *à Dios sólo se ha de dar la Adoración*,  
*para* } for { to God alone we must pay Worship: *dí esto*



*esto à Pédro*, I gave this to Peter ; *ésto es pára mi*, this is for me.

And though there are some Authors, who place here the Prepositions *bácia*, towards, and *basta*, even to ; I am of Opinion that they belong to the Accusative, because they are equivalent to the *Latin erga, versus, versum ; usque, ad, &c.* and I see no Reason to the contrary.

### Prepositions governing the Accusative.

*à*, as *ámo à Dios*, I love God ; *voy à Róma*, I go to Rome. *Míre à tal parte*, look on such side, toward such a place, and stands *por bácia*, towards ; *à modo de Conversación*, by way of Conversation, instead of *por*, by.

*Ante*, before ; as *bói el doce de Júnio pareció ante mi*, this Day the twelfth of June appeared or came before me.

*Entre*, among, between ; as *hablando entre nosotros, le diré la diferencia, que hai entre las Cortes de Londres y Madrid*, speaking between us, (among us) I will tell you the Difference that there is between the Courts of London and Madrid.

*Según*, according ; as *según loque se me dixo, créo, que todo es un embuste*, according to what is told me, I believe, that every thing is a fly Lie, Deceit, Falsehood, or Imposition.

*Sobre*, upon, as *todo lo que tengo, lo puedo llevar sobre este Caballo*, every thing I have, I can carry it upon this Horse.

*Hasta*, until, even to ; as *Pasearé hasta las ocho de la Noche*, I will walk until nine a Clock in the Night ; *basta Mañana*, till to morrow, *iré hasta Roma*, I will go as far as Rome, even to Rome.

*Hacia*, towards ; *voyme bácia el Río*, I go towards the River.

*Por*,



*Por*, for, by, through ; *Consuéleme por amor de Díos*, Comfort me for God's sake ; *Las diez tocaron quando passaba por esta calle*, it struck ten a Clock when I went through this Street. *Le assegúro ésto por mi palábra, por mi vida, por mi Fe'*, I assure you this by my Word, by my Life, by my Faith. *Por* is sometimes taken for *para*, but of this we will take notice afterwards.

*Cábe*, near, as *Le ballé cábe la Ciudad* (*Cábe*, an old Word) I found him near the City.

*En*, in ; as *espéro y creo en Díos*, I hope, and believe in God.

*Cóntra*, against, as *lo que bablas es cóntra los Atributos de Díos*, what you do speak is against the Attributes of God, &c.

### Prepositions governing the Ablative.

*à*, as *créo que le Castigarán à pena de Privacion de Oficio*, I believe that they will punish him, with the Privation, or depriving him of his Office or Employment. *Lo bízo à colór de engañarnos*, he has done it with an Intention to deceive under the Colour, &c. *à* is taken here as *con*.

*Con*, with ; *ven con mígo*, come with me.

*De*, as *Díos formo à Eva de la Costilla, que es buéssu tuerto*, God formed Eve from the Rib, which is a crooked Bone. *Víne de Róma*, I came from Rome.

*Sin*, without. *Lo bíce sin ayúda*, I have done it without help.

*En*, in ; *no téngo dinero en el Bolsillo*, I have no Money in the Purse.

*Por*, for, *Lo bíce por ti*, I have done it for you, &c.

## C H A P. VIII.

*Of* INTERJECTIONS.

**I**Nterjections are Parricles thrown into Discourse, which denote, or show the Passions of the Mind. Of Mirth, or Rejoycing. *A la gála, a la gála.* Which is O fine, O rare, &c.

Wondering, *Valgame Diós*, God help me, which is also usual in a Fright, and upon other Occasions.

Grieving, *Guay*, Alas! or *Ay de mi!* Alas for me.

Wishing, *Oxalá*, Would to God, &c.

*Ha*, ah! *bé*, as *bé que dices*, he! what you say!

*O*, as *O Dios!* *O Dolor!* O God! O pain, or grief!

*A*, as *à Fuláno*, ho, there such a one, &c.

## REMARKS *upon some Spanish Words and Phrases.*

**A**LL Languages have some peculiar Expressions to themselves, which are not the same in other Tongues, and the *Spanish* is not without some of that Sort. Having therefore already run through all, that belongs to the usual Parts of Discourse, and their Nature; it will not be improper to add something concerning these Words and Phrases in the *Spanish* Tongue, which are not to be found in others.

In the first place, the Preposition *Des* is inseparable from some other Word, and never to be used  
but

but in Composition, as signifying nothing by itself: but being join'd to another Word, denotes a Privation of what the other imports, as the Syllable *Dis* does in some *English* Words; thus *Hónra*, is Honour, *Des'hónra*, Dishonour, or Disgrace: *Dícha*, good Fortune, *Desdicha*, Misfortune. The same Effect it has when join'd with Verbs; as *Hacér*, to make, *Des'hacér*, to undo; *Armár*, to arm, *Desarmár*, to disarm.

*En* is commonly in, as *en cása*, in the House; *en la calle*, in the Street, &c. but in some Cases it has a peculiar Signification, not to be express'd in any other Language, that I know of; as for instance, *Estár en cuérpo*, literally in *English* is, to be in Body, which is nonsense; but the true Meaning of it, is, to be without a Coat or Cloak for a Man, or for a Woman without a Scarf or a Veil, so that the Body is more expos'd to View, without an upper Garment. *Está en piérnas*, literally he is in Legs, which has no Meaning, but it signifies, he is bare legg'd, that is, his Legs are expos'd without Stockings. *Estói en cárnes*, literally I am in Flesh, but the true Meaning is, I am stark naked, I have nothing to cover my Flesh. *En cuéros*, signifies the same as *En cárnes*, that is stark naked, the Difference being that *en cárnes*, is in naked Flesh, and *en cuéros*, is in naked Skin; much like the *English* Expression, that a Man is in Buff, when he is stark naked.

*En* shews, or it notes the last end of a Thing; as *creo en Díos*, I believe in God. When it's found before the Infinitive, then it turns the Infinitive into an *English* Gerund, as *consiste en bablárr bién*, it consists or depends in speaking well. When before a Gerund, it is the same as *after* and *at* in *English*; as *en cenándo*, after Supper, or when at Supper; *en confessándo la Verdád*, after your confessing the Truth, or when you confess the Truth; it signifies *as soon*, as *en acabándo lo diré*, as soon as I have done I will tell it



it to you. *En despertando, me levantaré*, as soon as I wake, I will get up; and then it stands for *luégo*, or *tan presto que, cómo, or quando*; as *en despertando*, viz. *Quando despertare*, when I shall, or should wake.

*Hidépúta* in its Genuine and usual Acceptation, is the Contraction of *Hijo de púta*, Son of a Whore, a most scandalous Word in all Languages, and as such, scarce ever us'd by *Spaniards* of any Politeness, in its vulgar and true Meaning: Yet as bad as it is in itself, it is become a Sort of Exclamation, mostly us'd by vulgar People, and that in Contempt, and by way of Scorn, as *O bidepúta y que gran personage que es!* O the Son of a Whore, or the Scoundrel, what a great Person he is! to denote a mean Person, a vile Wretch, carrying himself loftily. Yet some, through Ignorance, not reflecting on the Baseness of the Expression, will let it fly without thinking even to commend any thing that surprises them, as *O bidepúta y que bien que lo ha bécho!* where that scandalous word drops without thinking, and the whole imports no more, than, O how bravely he has done it! even as among us, we too often hear a Rake say to his Friend, Damn you *Tom*, I'm glad to see you! thus cursing him out of meer Affection.

*Hidálgo*, is a Gentleman, a Man of good Birth, being a Contraction of *Hijo dalgo*, or rather *Hijo de algo*, the Son of something, that is, of a Person of note, or one remarkable for something; not for much Money, which in *Spain*, does not make a Gentleman, but for something that is honourable; as Virtue, Learning, Wisdom, or Valour.

*Vuéstia mercéd*, (as it is said before) is generally contracted into *Ustéd* in speaking, and in writing express'd by these two Letters *V. M.* This is a courteous expression to be found in no other Language, being always us'd where there is any Civility, the *Spaniards* never saying you to one another, which would



would be very unmannerly ; for *Tu*, you, is only us'd from a Master to a Servant, or from a Superior to some very mean Person. Where the least respect is shown, and this practised even to very indifferent Persons ; they say *Vos*, ye ; and even this is not allow'd of, unless the Person so expressing himself, be much superior to the other. The common word therefore in Discourse between People of any Fashion, or good Manners is *usted*, for *Vuestra merced*, which has nothing to answer it in *English*, but is in the Nature of your Worship ; for in speaking to a Nobleman, they use *Vuestra Señoría*, sometimes contracted into *Usía*, your Lordship : *Vuestra Excelenciá*, your Excellency, &c. but they have not the Title of your Grace, as in *English*. There is another respectful Way of speaking, which is calling a Man by his Name, though speaking to him, *Sea servido de sentárse el Señor Don Juan*, May it please Don John to sit down, &c. Where we may also observe, that the word *Don* is also peculiar to the *Spanish*, formerly a Title more sparingly us'd, and given only to Knights, and Persons of Distinction ; but now grown common to all that can claim any thing of Gentility, but yet not to Tradesmen, and inferior Persons. *Señór*, is like the *Latin Dominus*, either Sir, or Lord, and therefore equivocal ; for they say, *Si Señor*, yes Sir, to the King ; and *Si Señor*, yes Sir, to the least Gentleman ; just as we do, Sir, to the King, and to any other. Yet is *Señór*, a Lord, as has been said ; the which Difference is found by the manner of speaking ; for though in speaking they say, *Señór Don Juan*, *Señór Don Pedro*, yet a Letter must not be superscrib'd, *Al Señor Don Pedro*, unless he be a Lord ; because then it implies Dignity, and in common speaking it does not. So in speaking to say, *es un Señor*, or *es un gran Señor*, implies that he is a Lord, or a great Lord. However within a Letter, as we begin Sir, so they begin, *Mí Señor mío*, without thereby meaning to give the title of Lord, but as

if

if we should say, my good Master, or good Sir. Much more may be said to this purpose, but this Place will not allow of it; these few Instructions are convenient for Learners, that they may not only speak true *Spanish*, but with good manners, and politely.

*Fuláno*, *zutáno* or *citáno*, with their Diminutives *Fulaníco*, or *Fulanillo*, *zutaníco* or *citaníco*, and *citanillo*, are Words us'd to signify a third Person nameless, as we say, such a one, and all of them import the same: the two first being us'd to express two distinct Persons, not named, as such a one, and such a one; the first of them always us'd if only one Person be spoke of, and the second never but when there is occasion to mention two. They are often us'd in the Feminine Gender, as *Fulána*, *citána*.

*Abáxo*, in it's own Sense signifies below, and *De-báxo*, under; but as apply'd, the first may have the same meaning with the latter; as *De Diós abáxo yó lo bize hómbre*, under God I made him a Man. *Del Rey abáxo no ay mayor Personaje*, next the King there is no greater Person.

*A vuéltas*, though it seems to come from *vuélvo*, I turn, or return, signifies among; as *A vuéltas de ótras cosas le dió una cadena*: among other things he gave him a chain.

*Cábo*, properly signifies the end; but it extends to other meanings, as *Estói al cábo*, in one sense is, I am reduc'd to extremity, either with Sicknefs, or Poverty; and the same Words import, I fully understand, or I am entirely apprized of the thing. Again, *Mugér bermósa por el cábo*, is a Woman perfectly beautiful; and *Tomár la cosa muí por el cábo*, is to take a thing in the hardest sense.

*Recáudo*, or *Recádo*, for it is written both ways, though most commonly pronounced the latter, is a word of various Significations. *El dinéro está à buen recádo*, The Money is safely plac'd, it is in  
good



good Hands, or safe. *Recádo pára escrivir*, the necessaries for writing. *Dile un recádo*, I deliver'd him a Message. *Buén recádo trábiga*, I come well provided. *Recádo*, is also us'd for a Subpena, and several other ways.

*Aldabáda*, is properly, a Knock at a Door ; but *dar aldabádas*, is sometimes meant of much babbling, or talking to no purpose.

*A pies juntillas*, is a very odd Expression, without any real Signification of it self, and yet there is a way of using it thus, *Créo à pies juntillas*, I positively believe, I am stedfast in the Belief, without asking any further Questions.

*Tomár las de villa Diego*, is to run away.

*Hablar de chacóta*, to banter, or talk idly, a word seldom us'd, but by way of Contempt of the Person it is applied to.

*Dar xabón a la Rópa*, to soap Linnen for washing ; but *Dar un xabón a una persóna*, is what we call to rattle one, to give a severe Reprimand.

### A Few Comparisons.

*Mas bláncu que la Nieve*, whiter than Snow.

*Mas négro que la Pez*, blacker than Pitch.

*Mas amárgo que la Hiél*, more bitter than Gaul.

*Mas dúlce que la Miél*, sweeter than Honey.

*Mas brávo que un León*, fiercer than a Lyon.

*Mas mánso que una oveja*, tamer than a Sheep.

Comparisons to exprefs doing Things impracticable.

*Es cómo dar con el puño en el Ciélo*. That is like striking at Heaven.

*Es cómo becbár lánzas en la Mar*. That is like darting at the Sea.

*Es cómo predicár en Desiérto*. It is like preaching in a Desert.

*Es cómo cogér água en Cesto.* It is like drawing Water in a Basket.

*Es cómo querér volár sin álas.* It is like attempting to fly without Wings.

*Es cómo el péro del Horteláno, que ni cóme las berzas, ni las déxa comér a los ótros.* He is like the Gardiner's Dog, that neither eat's Cabbage, nor lets others eat it. We say, like a Dog in a Manger, that will neither eat Hay, nor let the Horse eat it.

Observe, That most of the Adverbs Adjectives are turned likewise in *Spanish* by the Preposition *con*, and the Substantive, as *prudentémnte*, prudently, is the very same as *con prudéncia*, with prudence.

*Atrevidaménte*, boldly, *con atrevimiento*, with boldness.

*Eleganteménte*, elegantly.

*Con elegáncia*, with elegance.

*Dicbosaménte*, happily.

*Con dicha*, with happiness.

*Liberalménte*, liberally, *con liberalidád*, with liberality, &c.

There are Degrees of Comparison among the Adverbs, as *Doctaménte*, *mas doctamente*, *doctíssimamente*, wisely.

*áy*, *bái*, *abí*.

There are several who make no Difference between *ay* the Interjection, *áy* the Verb, and *áy* the Adverb; but there is a vast one, in their being spelt and pronounced right. The Interjection *áy*, *alafs*, is rightly spelt, and the Accent is to be on the *á*, and 'tis to be pronounced long; the Verb is written thus *bái*, there is but one Syllable, and to be pronounced as such: the Adverb thus *abí* there; and a strong Accent is to be put on the *i*, as *áy de mí!* *que báí muchos Atbéos* or *Atbeístas abí en Londres*, *y témo el ír*, *alafs* for me! that there are many Atheists there



there (or in that place *London*) in *London*, and I am afraid to go.

*aquí, acá, &c.*

*Aquí* here, in the Place where one stands ; *acá*, hither ; *por aquí, por acá*, here-about ; *abí*, there, a little farther ; *allá*, thither, to that place ; *acúllá*, yonder, there, in that place ; *por abí porallí*, there-about ; *por abí porallá*, on that side, that way ; and they are join'd to the Prepositions *de*, from, *por*, by ; as *de aquí, de acá*, from, hence ; *de allá, de acúlla*, from, thence ; *por aquí*, by here, by this place ; *por acá*, by these Parts, in these Parts ; *por allá*, by those Parts ; *por acúlla*, by those other remote Parts or Places.

*ánte, ántes.*

*Ante*, before, is a Preposition, as *no conviène bablár así ánte la preséncia del Rey*, it is not fit or convenient to speak so, or thus, before the King's Presence : *ánte* is an Adverb, and is used as *ántes*, as in the Law of *la Partida* 2, Tit. 4. L. 1. but at present never used so : It signifies sometimes that which is first in time, or of a greater importance, as *ánte todas las cosas*, before all things : *ánte* signifies likewise a Buffoloe's Hide, and the Fruit Plates that are served up at Dinner or Supper before the Meat : *ántes* has likewise this last Signification.

*Antes*, as an Adverb, signifies the preceeding Time or Place ; as *lo dixé ántes*, I said it before ; *conservó los Criados en los cargos de ántes*, he kept the Servants in the same Places they had before ; it is likewise a Preposition Adversative, and signifies rather, as *antes quíero morir que pecár*, I rather love to die, then to sin : It requires likewise a Genitive, as *ántes de la Muerte del Rey apareció un Cométa*,  
a Comet

a Comet did appear before the Death of the King, or the King's Death.

*Antes* is taken as *antecedente*, preceeding, or before, as *el ejército del año ántes nos taló los Campos*, the Army of the preceeding Year spoiled, ravaged, or wasted the Fields.

*Antes con antes*, adverbial. *immediately*, and more than immediately, if possible; a sudden diligence, *ex improviso*, suddenly, unexpected; as it will be seen in the several Phrases that often happen in Writings.

*Antes del día*, before Day break; *antesque*, a Preposition conjunctive, as *antesque vayas a trabajar, véte*; à Rezár, before you go to Work, go to or do your Prayers.

*Ante* and *antes* are likewise Prepositions, and help in the Composition of some Words, but never change *e* or *es* into *i* as an Author observes wrongfully, because we don't say, *Anticámara*, but *Antecámara*, Anti-chamber, *Antesála*, a Room before the Saloon, or the State Room.

### *Delante, adelante.*

*Delante*, before, in presence, fronting, is a Preposition governing the Genitive, as *vivo delante de la Lonja*, I live fronting the Change: *este Crimen se comitió delante del Gobernador*, this Crime was committed before the Governor: *Quítese de delante de mi*, go away, or from thy presence. It is likewise an Adverb, as *el General va delante*, the General goes at the Head, or before, &c.

*Adelante*, an Adverb, signifies fronting, forwards, before, as *vámos adelante*, let us go on, or forwards. It signifies Time, when it has before it *en, pára, de aquí, de allí*, &c. as *en adelante*, afterwards, in time to come; *para en adelante*, for the time to come; *de aquí adelante*, from hence forward; *mas adelante*, farther

farther yet; *de boi en adelante*, from this time forward, &c.

*!Aina, áinas.*

*!Aina*, Adverb, soon, sooner, as *más áina lo haré yo que tu*, I will do it sooner than you; *tu aprendiste la leccion en una hora, pero yo la aprenderé mas áina*, you did learn your Lesson in an Hour, but I will learn it sooner. So that *áina* always has *mas* before it.

*!Ainas*, Adverb, almost, near attend; as *áinas me mató*, he almost kill'd me; *estói áinas de la Muerte*, I am near my Death. These words are but seldom used in *Spanish*.

*Balde, de Balde, en balde.*

*Balde* is a Word used generally in *Andalusia*, and signifies a Bucket to draw Water from a Well, &c. but in *Spanish* has no Signification, but when in Composition, and then is an Adverb; as *debálde*, gratis, free cost, for nothing, without occasion; as *le hé servido debálde*, I have served him for nothing; *comímos de balde*, we eat free cost; *le castigó de balde*, punished him without occasion. *Enbalde* (not *embalde*, as some do write it carelessly) in vain, without effect; as, *despues de todo, nuestro trabajo será enbalde*, after all, our Labour will be in vain; *Prediqué enbalde*, I preached without effect, in vain.

*Note*, This frequent Expression of some Shopkeepers to the Buyers; *se lo venderé de balde*, I will sell it to you for nothing, that is, almost for nothing, so cheap that the like will be found nowhere for Cheapness.



*Atruéque.*

Is an Adverb, *vamos atruéque*, let us change ; but when it signifies *instead*, or *in the room of*, then it is a Preposition, and requires the Genitive ; as, *atruéque de su anillo*, or *fortíja, le daré la miá*, I will give you my Ring instead, or in the room of yours.

*Of Para and Por.*

These Prepositions are often confounded by the Gentlemen that learn the *Spanish*, nay even by some *Spanish* Authors, so that I think it necessary to observe that,

*Para*, for ; serves to denote the Utility, or Detriment to a Person ; as *estos cien reales son para Pedro, que es póbrec*, these hundred Reals are for Peter, who is poor, or because he is poor. *Los di para vmd.* I gave them for you ; *víne aqui para hablar con vmd.* I came here to speak with you.

When the *English* puts *to* before the Infinitive, the *Spaniards* make use of *de*, *à*, *para*, or *por* ; but with this Distinction, that *de* is put before the Infinitive, and when the Verbs *venir*, *haber*, *tener*, &c. or a Noun is before the Infinitive ; as *Vengo de cenar*, I come from Supper ; *he de de amar*, I must love ; *tengo de ir*, I must go ; *tengo necesidad de ser consolado*, I want to be comforted, &c. when a Verb of Motion preceeds the Infinitive, as *la Léy de Dios me compéle à bacér bién*, Divine Law compels me to do good ; *vôl à leer este libro*, I go to read this Book. *Para*, when the Verb tends to an Habit, Use, Custom, or its Quality, as *ô señor ! dadme vuestra Grácia, y bacédme hábil para amaros, constante para sufrir, y firme para perseverár,*



*verár*, O Lord! give me thy Grace, and make me able to love you, constant to suffer, and firm or stable to continue or persevere. *Por*, and *pára*, when they denote the End that moves or inclines, the Cause and the Means to obtain it; as *sírvo à Díos por gozár de el prêmio*, I serve God to enjoy the Reward, or that I may, or in order to enjoy the Reward. *El espíritu málo nos pone amenúdo malos pensamiéntos para desviarnos del camíno de la virtúd*, the evil Spirit puts on us often bad Thoughts to set us out of the way of Virtue.

*Para* is used in questioning and answering, and signifies, for what? why? for whom? to what purpose, &c. as *Paraque se áixo esto?* to what purpose? to what end, for what is this said? *No báí paraque*, there is no Reason, no Occasion, no Cause: *Para quien es ésta carta?* *para mi*, for whom is this Letter? for me. *Paraque* signifies likewise *that*, and is a Sign that denotes the subjunctive Mood; as, *paraque yo áme*, that I may love: It expresses also, to what End, Office, or Place, a Thing, or a Person is good for; as *éste Caballéro es buéno para Ministro*, *aquéel para Secretário*, *y el otro para Mayor dómo*, this Gentleman is good for a Minister, viz. to be a Minister, that for a Secretary, and the other for a Steward. *Este epéjo es bueno para este quárto*, *y aquéllas cortinas para mi cáma*, this Looking-Glass is good for this Room, and those Curtains for my Bed.

It denotes present and future Time; as, *este vestido es buéno para bói*, *pára Mañana*, *y para cada día*, this Suit of Cloth is good for this Day, for Tomorrow, and for every Day: *be comprádo trigo para un año*, I have bought Corn for a Year: *Abóra y para siempre*, *alabémos a Díos*, let us praise God now and for ever. Exceptions, *Para el año passádo se compráron estas provisiónes*, *y dúran haun*, these Pro-

visions were bought for last Year, that is, for the service of last Year, and last as yet: *Para ayér (el día de ayér) se biciéron estos Versos*, these Verses were made for Yesterday, that is, to celebrate that Day.

*Pára póco*, good for little, of small capacity.

*Paracon*, between us, or in my, or our Opinion; as, *para conmigo es cierto*, in my opinion it is true.

*Por* sometimes denotes that the Thing is not yet done; as, *esta obra está por acabár*, this Work is not yet finished: *por bacerse*, to be done.

It signifies likewise the End of, or Means to do a Thing; as, *se riñéron pormí*, they quarrelled on my account, &c.

*Por*, by, for, through; as *Por estos médios lo alcanzó*, he obtain'd it by these Means; *fuí al Banco por ducientas libras*, I went to the Bank for 200 l. *passémos por ésta cálle*, let us go through this Street.

*Por*, though, although, &c. *por pequeña que sea la tomaré*, tho' so small I will take it, altho' it be small I will take it, and then it denotes a Tense in the Optative, as *por docto que sea*, though he be a learned Man, &c.

In Composition, as *por tal*, so that; *por un tal*, for such a one; *porloque*, *porloqual*, for which; *Pordonde*, which way; *porende*, therefore; *por éssó*, for that Reason; *porque*, why; *por ventúra*, peradventure, perhaps. But *pro* for *provécho*, as *buen pro le bága*, much good may it do you: *pro*, *el pro*, the reason of a Thing, as *el pró de las Mugéres*, Women's Reason; *pro y contra*, pro and con, for and against; *por acáso*, by chance, by accident; *por dinero báila el Pérro*, the Dog dances for Money; or as we say in *English*, Money makes the Mare to go.

*Priméro,*



*Primero, Primo, &c.*

Are Adjective Ordinals, but with Distinction ; because we use *Primo*, and not *Primero* in the great Numbers, as an Author wrongfully saith ; we don't say *vigésimo primero*, but *vigésimo Primo*, 21st ; *trigésimo primo*, 31st. *Primero* stands sometimes for *primeramente* ; and when it has *lo* before it, it is taken as Substantive ; it is often us'd before and after the Substantives, when before them looses *o*, as *primer lugar*, *lugar primero* ; when an Adverb it signifies first, before, in the first place, rather ; as *primero iré a la Guerra, que a la Escuela*, I rather chuse to serve in the War, then to go to School, &c. *Primo*, the first, the best, chiefest, a delicate curious Thing : *Primo* rarely is join'd to any Substantive, because it stands as a Substantive itself, and varies its Termination, and then signifies a Cousin, as *Primo Hermáno*, a Cousin German ; *Prima Hermána*, a she Cousin German : *obra Prima*, curious Work, the best ; *lo Primo*, the very best, &c.

N O.

Altho' *no*, be a Negative, in questioning it is a Note of Interrogation ; as *me estará aquí no ?* shall I not wait here ? *No me hará este favor ?* Will you not do me this favour ? and then it stands for *whether or no*.

*Tanto, Quanto, tan, Quan.*

The Adverbs *Tanto*, so much, as much ; *Quanto*, how much, are often put before Substantives, Verbs, &c. to signify the Quantity, Manner, or Circumstances of the Action, &c. as, *por tanto*

*comer estás enfermo*, you are sick for having eat so much, for over eating ; *Quanto bebo me hace mal*, every thing I drink, (all that I drink) does me no good. *Quanto pide por estos güantes ? tanto*, how much do you ask for these Gloves ? so much. *Tanto quanto*, every thing, so much as ; *tanto mas*, so much more. *Tanto* signifies likewise a Counter to play : *Quanto*, all, every thing, as *quanto dice es falso*, all, what, or every thing he saith is false ; *quanto mas ?* how much more ? *quantos ?* how many ? *quanto quiera*, how much soever.

*Tán*, so, as ; as *aquel Páño es tan bueno como este*, that Cloth is as good as this ; *tiene tan buenos amigos*, he hath as good Friends : *quán*, how ; as *ò quan malo eres, y quan bueno te haces entre los Nobles*, O how bad you are, and how good do you make yourself among the Nobility.

*Tanbien*, so well, as well ; *estói tan bien convalecido*, I am so well recovered : *esto está tan bien hecho como se pueda hacer*, this is as well done as it could be done ; so that *Tanbien* must not be confounded with *Tambien*, as an Author does, because *también* signifies *also*, and not *as well*.

### *Además.*

The Adverb *Además*, signifies, besides, moreover, over and above, in vain ; as *Además, conviene saber que*, besides, moreover, it is to be known that ; *pensativo además quedó Don Quixote, esperando, &c.* over and above thoughtful remain'd Don Quixote, waiting, &c. Vol. II. Chap. III. *Además se cansa*, takes pains in vain. *Pordemás*, that is, in vain, to no purpose ; it governs likewise Genitive, as *ademas de esto*, besides this, &c.

*Según*, when before a Verb is an Adverb, and signifies according, as ; as *Según dice Don Juan*, as Sir  
John



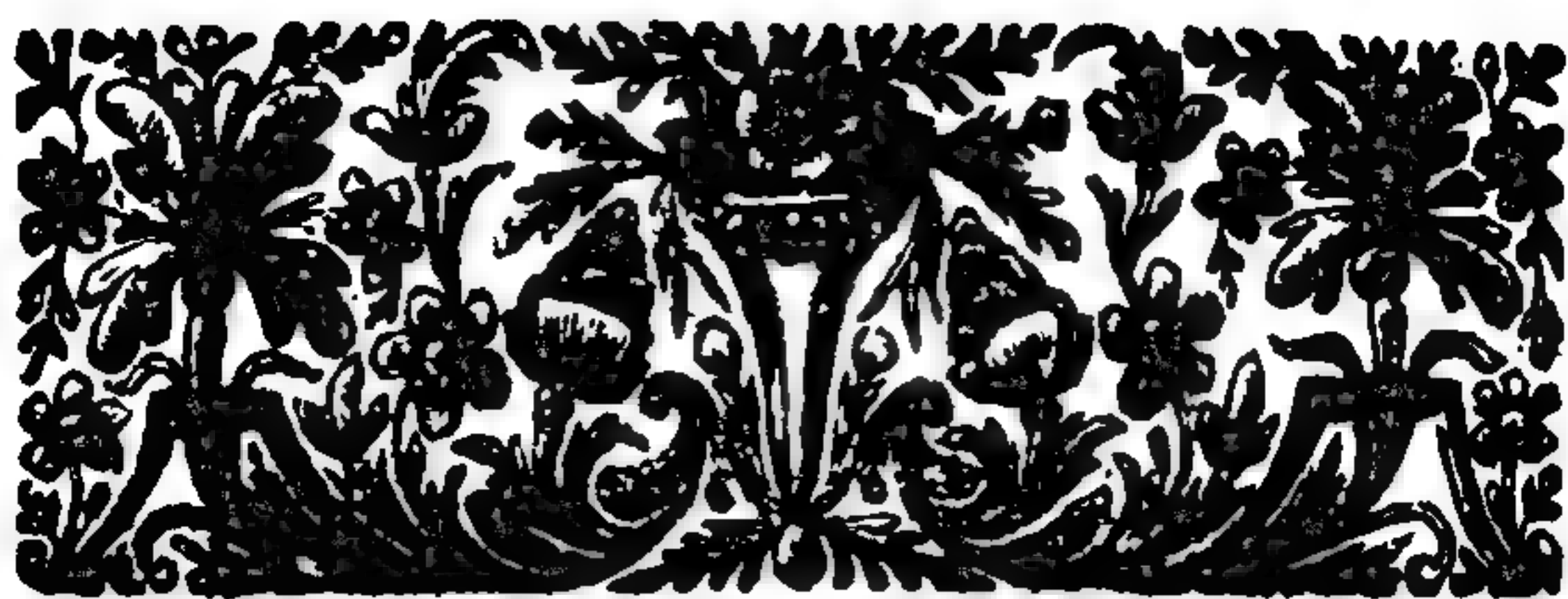
*John* saith ; it is likewise a Preposition governing the Accusative ; as, *según mi parecer*, according to my Opinion.

*Ayúso*, an old Adverb, is the same as *abáxo*, below, under ; as *lo echáron ayúso*, they throw'd it down, below, under ; it signifies likewise *after* and *under*, as *abáxo* ; as *de Dios en Ayúso*, or *de Dios abáxo yo le curé*, under God, or after God, I am the Person who cured him, or made him well.

*Hasta*, till, even, up to, as far as ; as, *basta quando?* till when ? *basta que venga*, untill I come ; *basta quanto?* how much ? *basta tanto*, so much ; *basta el borde*, up to the brink ; *basta Palacio*, as far as the Palace ; *basta las doce*, till Noon.

This may serve by way of Specimen, and Practice will teach what can't be so well committed to writing, without far exceeding the Bounds of a Grammar.





THE  
SECOND PART  
OF THE  
*SPANISH GRAMMAR,*  
Called SYNTAX.

---



THE *Spanish* has so great an Affinity with the *Latin*, that whosoever understands the latter, will find little difficulty in the Construction of the other.

Having hitherto treated of the eight Parts of Speech, as they belong to Etymology, it remains now to treat of them as belonging to the Syntax (called Construction, or the order of Construction.)

CHAP. I.

*Of the Concords and Articles.*

**T**HERE are three Concords in the *Spanish* Speech, viz.

1. Between the nominative Case, and the Verb; as, *yo ámo*, I love; *Pédro scribe*, Peter writes.

2. Between the Substantive and the Adjective; as, *bombre curioso*, a curious Man; *Muger virtuósa*, a virtuous Woman.

3. Between the Antecedent and the Relative, as *Feliz es, quien vive contento*, happy is he who lives contented, or with content.

*Of the first Concord.*

A Verb personal agreeth with his Nominative Case in Number and Person; as *yo Léo*, *tu Apréndes*, *el Maestro enséna*, I read, thou learns, the Master teaches, &c. *Note*, That many Nominative Cases, with a Conjunction Copulative between them, will have a Verb Plural; as, *Pédro y Juan viniéron a vérme Ayér*, Peter and John came to see me Yesterday.

Sometimes a whole Clause, and the infinitive Mood of a Verb, may be the Nominative to the Verb following; as, *todo loque se díxo ayér, me movió á tomár ésta resolución*, all that was said Yesterday moved me to take this Resolution: *el comér satisfáce al hambriento*, to eat, eating, satisfies the Hungry; *el levantarse temprano es saludable*, to rise betime in the Morning, is wholesome.

*Exceptions.*



*Exceptions.*

When a Question is asked, then the Nominative goes after the Verb; as, *está el Sr. Fulano en casa?* is Mr. such a one at home? *como se entiende esto?* how is this understood; *que tiene vmd.?* What is the Matter with you? And so in the Negatives, as *no es esto?* *no es verdad?* Is it not this? is it not true? These Relatives are excepted; *que hora es?* What is it a Clock? *quién es?* who is? *quien toca?* who knocks? *quién llama?* who calls, &c.

Some of the Reciprocal Verbs, and the Imperatives of all the Verbs have their Nominative after them; as, *pésame mucho*, I am very sorry; *ama tu*, love thou.

When a Verb comes between two Nominatives of diverse Numbers, the Verb may indifferently accord with either of them; as, *tantas palabras juntas es confusion*, or *son confusion*, so many Words together are a Confusion: *las superfluidades son Excesso* Superfluities are an Excess.

*Of the Second Concord.*

The Adjective, whether it be a Noun, Pronoun, or Participle, agreeth with his Substantive in Case, Gender, and Number; as, *el bómbrre sábio, y la Mugér virtuósa son dignos de alabánza*, a learned Man, and a virtuous Woman are worthy of praise; by which you see how they agree, and that the Masculine Gender is more worthy than the Feminine; and so it is said *dignos* and not *dignas*: It is likewise plain by the above Example, that, many Substantives with a Conjunction copulative between them will have an Adjective Plural.

When



When a Clause serves as a Substantive, then the Adjective is to be put in the Neuter Gender ; as, *el Rogár a Díos en todo tiempo es buéno ; pero en tiempo calamitoso es neccessário*, it is always good to pray to God ; but in calamitous time it is necessary.

### *Exceptions.*

Before the Nouns Substantives beginning with *a*, *Euboniæ gratia*, for the sake of the good Sound, the Spaniards use the Masculine Article, as has been said before, as *el águá*, the Water ; *al alma*, the Soul ; which proceeds from the Spaniards not using the Apostrophe, as some other Nations do, &c.

After *Vuestra Merced* the Adjective does not agree in Gender with *v.m.d.* but with the Person to whom one speaks, as we observ'd before ; so that when we speak to a Man, we say, *bien venído sea v.m.d.* Sir you art welcome ; and in the Plural, *bien venídos sean v.mdes.* Gentlemen you are welcome ; when to a Woman, *vmd. es múi buéna*, Madam you are very good, &c.

Note, That *Buéno, malo, úno, priméro, tercero, &c.* when before a Substantive, they lose the Letter *o* ; and *ciénto* loses *to* : and tho' some Authors are of Opinion, that *tanto* and *quanto* lose *to* before the Substantives, I say, that it is false, and wrong ; because *tanto* and *quanto* always remain whole, and are derived of the Latin Adverbs *Tanto, quanto* ; as, *quanto Mayor éres, tanto mas te humiliarás*, how much the greater you are, so much the more you should be humbled. But *tán* and *quán* are derived from the Latin *tam* and *quam*.

*Grande*, loses *de* before the Substantives that begin with a Consonant ; as, *gran Mugér*, a great Woman ; *Gran Cása*, a great House : but if the Substantive begins with *a* then it is often indifferently

differently used, and when begins with another Vowel always retains *de*.

Observe likewise, that the *Spaniards* do generally use the Adjectives after the Substantives, as it has been said : but the Epithets are used by the best *Spanish* Authors before the Substantives ; as, *el Seráfico San Francisco*, the Seraphick St Francis ; *el Melifluo St Bernardo*, the Mellifluous St Bernard ; *el intrépido General*, the intrepid General ; *el Philósofo Aristoteles*, the Philosopher Aristotle : *Sanctísimo Padre*, *Beatísimo Padre*, the Holy Father ; *Excelentísimo Señor*, most excellent Sir ; *ilustrísimo Señor*, most illustrious Sir, &c. and so we say *es buen hombre*, he is a good Man ; *este es un mal hombre*, this is a bad Man.

### *Of the third Concord.*

The Antecedent is a Word, or Clause that goes before the Relative, and is rehearsed again by the Relative.

The Relative agreeth with his Antecedent in Gender, Number and Person ; as, *es sabio, quien habla poco y bien*, that Man is wise, that speaketh but little and to the purpose.

When a Relative is between two Antecedents of diverse Genders, then it agreeth with either ; as, *el Réy se irá luego a una casa de campo, la que está en Windsor*, the King will soon go to a Country House, which is at Windsor ; *he recibido tres cartas, cuyo contenido me gusta mucho*, I have receiv'd three Letters, whose Contents please me much ; *atacáron al Enemigo, cuya infantería tomó luego la derrota*, they attack'd the Enemy, whose Foot soon gave way and fled.

Sometimes the Relative hath for his Antecedent the whole Sentence that goeth before it, and then it must be put in the Neuter Gender, and in the Singular



lar Number ; as, *alzáronse los soldádos en el fuerte contra su Gobernador, lo que le obligó a entregarle*, the Soldiers revolted in the Fort or Fortrefs against their Governor, which oblig'd him to deliver it up.

Many Antecedents Singular having a Conjunction Copulative between them, will have a Relative Plural, which shall agree with the Antecedent of the most worthy Gender ; as, *recebí el Cabállo y la Múla que me embió, losque presenté al Sr. Fuláno*, I receiv'd the Horse and the Mule that you sent me, which I presented to Mr such a one.

When there is no Nominative between the Relative and the Verb, then the Relative stands for the Nominative ; as, *quien dice esto ?* who saith this ? but when there is a Nominative between the Relative and the Verb, then the Relative shall be put in the Case governed by the Verb, or any other Word ; as, *la grácia que le pido*, the Favour which I beg of you ; *el Réy á quien obedesco*, the King to whom I obey ; *el Embaxadór, de cuya protección gozo, me escribe ésta carta*, the Embassador whose Protection I enjoy, wrote this Letter to me.

*Note*, that the Relatives you may make use of, are *le, les, la, lo, las, los* ; (to these four last you may add *que* ; as, *laque, loque, lasque, losque*) *quien, tal, quál, cuyo, que* ; to which you may likewise add a Preposition ; as, *à loque Digo*, to which I say ; *de loque recibí gusto*, of which I received Pleasure ; *de quien es ?* to whom it belongs ? *pára quién ? para él ;* for whom ? for him ; *cuyo es éste sombrero ?* then you may answer, *mio, túyo, or súyo, or del Sr. Fuláno, de aquel Caballéro*, mine, thine, or yours, or of Mr such a one, of that Gentleman.

Observe likewise, that these Relatives are called ellyptic Articles, because they express the Substantive which is not there ; as, *recebí la de v.m.d, la* for *la carta*, I received yours ; *leí los libros de Quevédo, pero los del Padre Feijoo no*, I read Quevédo's

*do's* Books, but not those of Father *Feijoo* ; and then they govern the Case of the Substantive ; as *recibí la de Pedro, pero no la de Juan*, I receiv'd that of *Peter's*, but not that of *John*, &c.

### *Of the Articles.*

There are three Articles in *Spanish*, as is said before, viz. *el* for the Masculines, *la* for the Femines, and *lo* for the Neuters ; and it can't be taken amiss, if I show here the manner, how they are to be used.

First, All proper Names of Men, Women, Gods, Goddesses, Angels good or bad ; of Months, Cities, Towns, and Villages, &c. have no Article before them ; as, *Pbelipe V. Rey de España Luis XV. Rey de Fráncia ; Jorge II. Rey de Inglatérra*, &c. Philip V. King of Spain, &c. *Carolina Réina de Inglatérra*, Calorine Queen of England : *Jupiter, Júno, Lucrécia, St Miguel, St Michael ; Enéro, January ; Febréro, February*, &c.

Secondly, If we put an Adjective between proper Names, or express their Epithets, or specify some Action, Passion, or Motion, and take notice of their Qualities, &c. then we put the Article before them ; as, *el Omnipotente Dios, el Dios de Misericórdia* ; the Almighty God, the God of Mercy ; *el invencible è intrépido General*, the invincible, and intrepid General : *el Rey, la Réina, el Príncipe, la Princesa, y el Dúque de Cumberland irán à la comédia éste nóche*, the King, the Queen, the Prince, the Princess, and the Duke of *Cumberland* will go to the Play-house this Night ; and so before other common Words.

Thirdly, Before the Numerals is never made use of the Article, but when they are taken relatively ; as, *los dos viniéron*, the two came ; *los doce meses del año*, the twelve Months of the Year ; *los siete días de la*



*de la semana*, the seven Days of the Week ; *las doce Tribus*, *los doce Apostoles*, *los doce pares de Fráncia*, *las quátro partes del Mundo*, &c. and so are *úno*, *ótro*, *qual*, the Participles, and some of the Infinitives ; as, *el uno*, the one, &c. *lo dicho*, the above said, *el comer*, *el beber y el dormir*, *con Moderación*, *bacén bien al cuérpo*, to eat, to drink, and to sleep with Moderation, does good to the Body.

The Particle *an* so much us'd in *English* is omitted in *Spanish* ; for tho' we say, another Man, another Day, they only say as the Latin, *ótro bómbré*, *ótro día*, not *un otro hombre*, or *un ótro día*.

*España* has but seldom an Article, and *Serdéña*, *Portugál*, *Secília*, and *cándia* never.

## C H A P. II.

### *Of the Construction of Nouns.*

**W**HEN two Substantives of diverse Significations, do so come together, that the Latter in some kind or other seem to be possessed, or depend of the former, then the latter is put in the Genitive Case ; as, *el amor de Díos es mas perfécto*, the Love of God is the most perfect : *amor del Pádre*, the Love of a Father ; *la Ternéza de la Mádre*, the Tendernefs of a Mother ; *la Eloquência de Cicerón*, the Eloquence of Cicero, &c. And often this Genitive is turned into an Adjective ; as, *el amor Divíno*, the Divine Love ; *el Amor Patérno*, the fatherly Love ; *la Ternéza Matérna*, the Motherly Tendernefs, &c.

An Adjective in the Neuter Gender put alone without a Substantive, standeth for a Substantive,  
and

and may have a Genitive Case after it ; *déme un poco de lo mucho, y algo de lo poco*, give me a little of the much, and something of the little you have ; *lo prudente de Don Pedro nos admira*, the prudent Part of Don Peter surprises us, &c.

The Nouns of Praise, and Dispraise, of Want, of Arts, Sciences, all proper Names of Cities, Towns, &c. of God, all proper Names of Men, Women, Spirits good and bad, of irrational Creatures, of inanimates, of Months, Nouns of Measure, &c. coming after a Noun Substantive, or a Verb Substantive may be put with the Preposition *de* ; as *Muchácho de buen ingenio*, a Boy of a good Wit ; *bómbre de mal Crédito*, a Man of bad Credit or Reputation ; *Maestro de Musica*, a Master of Music ; *Profesor de Teología*, a Professor of Divinity ; *la Casa de Pedro*, Peter's House ; *la ciudad de Londres*, the City of London ; *la voluntad de Dios*, the Will of God, &c.

Sometimes the Genitive Case is put alone, the former Substantive being understood by Eclipsis ; as *recebí dos Cartas, la de Pedro leí, pero no la de mi Correspondiente*, I receiv'd two Letters, I read that of Peter's, but not that of my Correspondent.

### *Of the Construction of Adjectives.*

Adjectives that signify Desire, Knowledge, Remembrance, Ignorance, or Forgetting, and such other like require a Genitive ; as *codicioso de dinero*, covetous of Money ; *ignorante de todo*, ignorant of all things, &c.

Nouns Partitives, and certain Interrogatives, with certain Nouns of Numbers, require Genitive ; as *algúno, ningúno, solo, úno, qualquier, dos, tres, Priméro, segúndo, &c. algúno de vosotros*, somebody of you, *el priméro de vosotros*, the first of you.

*Rómulo*



*Rómulo fue el Primero de los Reyes de Roma*, Romulus was the first of the Kings of Rome; *de que se trata en Londres?* *de Guerra*, what are you about in London? or what talke you in London? of War; *de quien se bábla?* *de los Turcos*, of whom speak they? of the Turks.

Adjectives signifying Fulness, Emptiness, Plenty, or Want, require *de*; as, *lléno de água*, full of Water; *falto de juício*, without his Senses. And sometime they require the Preposition *en*; as *abundante de todo*, or *en todo*, plentiful, or well stored with every Thing; *Rico de bienes*, or *en bienes temporales*, y *Pobre de los*, or *en los espirituales*, rich in temporal Goods, and poor in the spiritual, &c.

*Digno*, and *indigno*, require a Genitive; as, *sói digno*, or *indigno de bónra*, I am worthy or unworthy of Honour. But *adornádo*, *conténto*, *descontento*, *alégre*, &c. will have *de* or *con*, as, *este quarto está adornádo de preciosas alájas*, or *con preciosas alájas*, this Room is adorned with fine Furniture; *Conténto* and *Descontento*, require likewise *en*, as, *estói contento de ésto*, *con ésto*, or *en ésto*, I am contented with this, &c.

Adjectives, whereby is signified Profit, Disprofit, Likeness, Unlikeness, submitting or belonging to something, govern a Dative Case; as, *útil*, *provechoso*, *cómodo*, *Buén*, *conveniént*, *gustoso*, *málo*, *rendído*; *iguál*, *desiguál*, *semejánt*, *parecído*, *conforme*, &c. as, *será útil à Pédro el trabajar*, working will be profitable to Peter; and so are those of Affinity, which likewise are construed with a Genitive; as, *sói Pariénte de Fuláno* or *à Fuláno*, I am a Relation of, or to such a one.

Add to these some of the Verbals in *ble*, as *amable*, *dable*, &c.

N. B. That the Nouns of Measure of Length, Breadth, or Thickness of any Thing, is put in the Accusative, and the Adjective in the Genitive; as, *ésta torre tiéne cien piés de álto*, this Tower is one hundred Feet

R

high;



high ; *éste Páño tiéne dos váras de áncbo*, this Cloth has two Yards in Breadth.

Some Adjectives govern the Ablative Case ; as, *con*, or *en la cólera estói amaríllo*, y *con la ira colérico*, y *con sus amenázas temeróso*, I am pale for being angry, angry with Wrath, and with his Threatning timorous.

There are Ablatives Absolutes, (so called for their having no dependance in the Speech) as *acabáda la céna*, the Supper being finished, or having sup't ; *quitáda la Cáuza*, *césa el efécto*, the Cause being remov'd, the effect ceased.

The Ablative of the Instrument is made in *Spanish* with the Preposition *con*, with ; as *lo bíce con el Martíllo*, I have done it with the Hammer.

The Words *expérto*, *experiméntado*, *Períto*, *versádo*, *cursádo*, &c. require an Ablative with *en* ; as *versádo en libros*, vers'd in Books.

### *Of the Numerals.*

The Numerals may be divided into Cardinals ; as, *úno*, *dos*, *tres*, &c.

Ordinals ; as, *Priméro*, *segundo*, *tercéro*, &c.

Distributives, as, *de úno en úno*, *de dós en dós*, *de três en três*, &c.

Partitives, as *cada úno*, *úno y otro*, *algúno*, &c.

Collectives, as *una docéna*, *quincéna*, *veinténa*, *treinténa*, &c. a dozen and no more in *English*, they saying in its stead twenty, thirty, &c. *el quínto*, the fifth ; *la diéxma*, a tenth, &c.

Of Augmentation ; as *lo dóble*, *lo triple*, *lo quadru-ble*, &c.

Universal, as *todo*, *ningúno*, *náda*.

Particular ; as, *algúno*, *alguien*, &c.

All which govern the Genitive Case ; as, *el Priméro de todos*, the first of all.



*Of the Comparatives.*

The Comparatives *mas*, more ; *ménos*, less, govern *que*, than, in which the force of the Comparison lies ; *el todo es Mayor que la parte*, the Whole, or the Compound is greater or bigger than the Part ; *su Malicia es peor que la de el diáblo*, it's Malice is worse than that of the Devil's ; and so in *mejór*, *menór*. Now for the Regular Comparatives ; as, *es mas sábio que Salomón*, is wiser than Solomon ; *es mas Hermósa que Racbél*, is more beautiful than Rachel ; *es ménos prudente que su Hermáno*, is less prudent than his Brother.

They govern likewise *deloque*, than what ; as, *es mas Docto deloque se piénsa*, is more learned than what it is thought ; *es mas afortunádo deloque merece*, is more lucky than what he deserves.

When the Articles *el*, *la*, *lo* are put before *mas*, then it governs the Genitive ; as, *es el mas discreto de los hombres*, he is the discreetest of Men ; *la mas afable de todas las Mugéres*, the most affable of all Women ; *lo mas selecto de todo*, the most select of all, of every Thing.

They govern also the Preposition *entre* ; as, *es la mas Hermósa entre todas las Mugéres*, is the most beautiful among all Women ; *es el mas Docto entre todos los del Colegio*, is the most learned among all those of the College. Some Spanish Writers put *de* before *entre* ; as, *es el mas señaládo de entre sus condiscípulos*, is the most signilized from among his School-Fellows. By which the curious may observe the several Constructions that the Comparatives will bear.

The Examples with the Article before *mas*, are called Relative Superlatives, and the following absolute or independing ; which end in *íssimo* *íssima* *érrimo-ma*, &c. as *prudentíssimo*, most